

THE MODERN LIBRARY
OF THE WORLD'S BEST BOOKS

ROAN STALLION

TAMAR

AND OTHER POEMS

The publishers will be pleased to send, upon request, an illustrated folder setting forth the purpose and scope of THE MODERN LIBRARY, and listing each volume in the series. Every reader of books will find titles he has been looking for, handsomely printed, in unabridged editions, and at an unusually low price.

ROAN STALLION



TAMAR



AND OTHER POEMS

BY

ROBINSON JEFFERS

THE

MODERN LIBRARY

NEW YORK

COPYRIGHT, 1925, BY HORACE LIVERIGHT, INC.

COPYRIGHT, 1935, BY THE MODERN LIBRARY, INC.

COPYRIGHT RENEWED, 1953, BY ROBINSON JEFFERS



Random House IS THE PUBLISHER OF
THE MODERN LIBRARY

BENNETT A. CERF • DONALD S. KLOPPER • ROBERT K. HAAS

Manufactured in the United States of America

By H. Wolff

TO
UNA JEFFERS

INTRODUCTION

My publisher wrote that if I wanted to revise anything, here was my chance, for new plates would have to be made. I thought in a kind of panic, "Of course I ought to revise, but how terrible!" for it is a pleasure to write, but after a thing has been written I hate to see it again; poems are the sort of children that it is delightful to beget, dreary to educate. Yet it seemed clearly a duty. So I made terms with my conscience and my publisher: "If you'll let me off revising I'll write an introduction instead; that will only take a few hours, the other would take weeks." This is the introduction, a mere conscience-penny.

It might be entitled "Meditation by a Water-main." We used to walk in the Del Monte Forest in the days when it was uninhabited. Near the place where we climbed a fence to enter the woods there was a deep ravine, bridged by the water-main that ran from the dam up the Carmel Valley to the reservoir lake back of Monterey. A wooden trestle supported the big pipe where it crossed the gorge, and this was our bridge into the farther woods; but we had to scramble carefully, for wild bees hived halfway over, in the timbers against the pipe. And it was harder coming back; I had to make two crossings then, one to carry the dog, and one with the firewood that we brought home from the forest.

This was twenty-one years ago, and I am thinking of a bitter meditation that worked in my head one day while I

returned from the woods and was making my two crossings by the pipe-line. It had occurred to me that I was already a year older than Keats when he died, and I too had written many verses, but they were all worthless. I had imitated and imitated, and that was all.

I have never been ambitious, but it seemed unpleasant just the same to have accomplished nothing, but exactly nothing, along the only course that permanently interested me. There are times when one forgets for a moment that life's value is life, any further accomplishment is of very little importance comparatively. This was one of those times and I can still taste its special bitterness; I was still quite young at twenty-seven.

When I had set down the dog and went back over our bridge for the bundle of firewood my thoughts began to be more practical, not more pleasant. This originality, without which a writer of verses is only a verse-writer, is there any way to attain it? The more advanced contemporary poets were attaining it by going farther and farther along the way that perhaps Mallarmé's aging dream had shown them, divorcing poetry from reason and ideas, bringing it nearer to music, finally to astonish the world with what would look like pure nonsense and would be pure poetry. No doubt these lucky writers were imitating each other, instead of imitating Shelley and Milton as I had done . . . but no, not all of them, someone must be setting the pace, going farther than anyone had dared to go before. Ezra Pound perhaps? Whoever it was, was *original*.

Perhaps this was the means to attain originality: to make a guess which way literature is going, and go there first. Read carefully your contemporaries, chart their line of advance, then hurry and do what they are going to do next year. And

if they drew their inspiration from France, I could read French as well as any of them.

(This was not all quite seriously thought, partly I was just tormenting myself. But a young man is such a fool in his meditations, at least I was; let me say for shame's sake that I have not considered "trends" since turning thirty, nor been competitive either.)

But now, as I smelled the wild honey midway the trestle and meditated the direction of modern poetry, my discouragement blackened. It seemed to me that Mallarmé and his followers, renouncing intelligibility in order to concentrate the music of poetry, had turned off the road into a narrowing lane. Their successors could only make further renunciations; ideas had gone, now meter had gone, imagery would have to go; then recognizable emotions would have to go; perhaps at last even words might have to go or give up their meaning, nothing be left but musical syllables. Every advance required the elimination of some aspect of reality, and what could it profit me to know the direction of modern poetry if I did not like the direction? It was too much like putting out your eyes to cultivate the sense of hearing, or cutting off the right hand to develop the left. These austerities were not for me; originality by amputation was too painful for me.

But—I thought—everything has been said already; there seems to be only this way to go on. Unless one should do like the Chinese with their heavy past: eliminate one's own words from the poem, use quotations from books as the elder poets used imagery from life and nature, make something new by putting together a mosaic of the old. A more promising kind of amputation; one or two noble things might be done that way, but not more, for the trick would pall on Western ears;

and not by me, who never could bear the atmosphere of libraries since I escaped from my studious father's control.

I laid down the bundle of sticks and stood sadly by our bridge-head. The sea-fog was coming up the ravine, finger-ing through the pines, the air smelled of the sea and pine-resin and yerba buena, my girl and my dog were with me . . . and I was standing there like a poor God-forsaken man-of-letters, making my final decision not to become a "modern." I did not want to become slight and fantastic, abstract and unintelligible.

I was doomed to go on imitating dead men, unless some impossible wind should blow me emotions or ideas, or a point of view, or even mere rhythms, that had not occurred to them. There was nothing to do about it.

We climbed the fence and went home through the evening-lighted trees. I must have been a charming companion that afternoon.

This book began to be written three or four years later. I was past my green-sickness by that time, and did not stop to think whether the verses were original or followed a tendency, or would find a reader. Nor have I ever considered whether they deserved to find one.

ROBINSON JEFFERS.

CONTENTS

	PAGE
INTRODUCTION	vii
ROAN STALLION	3
THE TOWER BEYOND TRAGEDY	23
NIGHT	84
BIRDS	87
FOG	88
BOATS IN A FOG	89
GRANITE AND CYPRESS	91
VICES	92
PHENOMENA	93
PEOPLE AND A HERON	94
HAUNTED COUNTRY	95
AUTUMN EVENING	96
SHINE, PERISHING REPUBLIC	97
THE TREASURE	98
JOY	99
PRACTICAL PEOPLE	100
WOODROW WILSON	101
SCIENCE	103
THE TORCH-BEARERS' RACE	104
TAMAR	108
GALE IN APRIL	181
MAL PASO BRIDGE	182
THE COAST-RANGE CHRIST	186
DIVINELY SUPERFLUOUS BEAUTY	220
THE MAID'S THOUGHT	221

	PAGE
FAUNA	222
THE SONGS OF THE DEAD MEN TO THE THREE DANCERS	238
TO HIS FATHER	242
THE TRUCE AND THE PEACE	243
NATURAL MUSIC	249
POINT JOE	250
POINT PINOS AND POINT LOBOS	252
NOT OUR GOOD LUCK	260
THE CYCLE	262
SALMON-FISHING	264
TO THE HOUSE	265
TO THE ROCK THAT WILL BE A CORNERSTONE OF THE HOUSE	266
TO THE STONE-CUTTERS	268
SUICIDE'S STONE	269
WISE MEN IN THEIR BAD HOURS	270
CONTINENT'S END	271
APOLOGY FOR BAD DREAMS	275
ADJUSTMENT	279
COMPENSATION	280
PROMISE OF PEACE	281
AGE IN PROSPECT	282
ANTE MORTEM	283
POST MORTEM	284
THE BEACH	286
SUMMER HOLIDAY	288
LOVE-CHILDREN	289
NOON	291
CLOUDS OF EVENING	292
OCTOBER EVENING	293
PELICANS	294
CREDO	295

ROAN STALLION

ROAN STALLION

The dog barked; then the woman stood in the doorway, and
hearing iron strike stone down the steep road
Covered her head with a black shawl and entered the light
rain; she stood at the turn of the road.
A nobly formed woman; erect and strong as a new tower;
the features stolid and dark
But sculptured into a strong grace; straight nose with a high
bridge, firm and wide eyes, full chin,
Red lips; she was only a fourth part Indian; a Scottish sailor
had planted her in young native earth,
Spanish and Indian, twenty-one years before. He had named
her California when she was born;
That was her name; and had gone north.

She heard the hooves and
wheels come nearer, up the steep road.
The buckskin mare, leaning against the breastpiece, plodded
into sight round the wet bank.
The pale face of the driver followed; the burnt-out eyes;
they had fortune in them. He sat twisted
On the seat of the old buggy, leading a second horse by a
long halter, a roan, a big one,
That stepped daintily; by the swell of the neck, a stallion.
"What have you got, Johnny?" "Maskerel's stallion.
Mine now. I won him last night, I had very good luck."
He was quite drunk. "They bring their mares up here
now.

I keep this fellow. I got money besides, but I'll not show you." "Did you buy something, Johnny, For our Christine? Christmas comes in two days, Johnny." "By God, forgot," he answered laughing. "Don't tell Christine it's Christmas; after while I get her something, maybe." But California: "I shared your luck when you lost: you lost *me* once, Johnny, remember? Tom Dell had me two nights Here in the house: other times we've gone hungry: now that you've won, Christine will have her Christmas. We share your luck, Johnny. You give me money, I go down to Monterey to-morrow, Buy presents for Christine, come back in the evening. Next day Christmas." "You have wet ride," he answered Giggling. "Here money. Five dollar; ten; twelve dollar. You buy two bottles of rye whisky for Johnny." "All right. I go to-morrow."

He was an outcast Hollander; not old, but shriveled with bad living. The child Christine inherited from his race blue eyes, from his life a wizened forehead; she watched From the house-door her father lurch out of the buggy and lead with due respect the stallion To the new corral, the strong one; leaving the wearily breathing buckskin mare to his wife to unharness.

Storm in the night; the rain on the thin shakes of the roof like the ocean on rock streamed battering; once thunder Walked down the narrow canyon into Carmel valley and wore away westward; Christine was wakeful With fears and wonders; her father lay too deep for storm to touch him.

Dawn comes late in the year's dark,

Later into the crack of a canyon under redwoods; and
California slipped from bed
An hour before it; the buckskin would be tired; there was a
little barley, and why should Johnny
Feed all the barley to his stallion? That is what he would
do. She tiptoed out of the room.
Leaving her clothes, he'd waken if she waited to put them
on, and passed from the door of the house
Into the dark of the rain; the big black drops were cold
through the thin shift, but the wet earth
Pleasant under her naked feet. There was a pleasant smell
in the stable; and moving softly,
Touching things gently with the supple bend of the un-
clothed body, was pleasant. She found a box,
Filled it with sweet dry barley and took it down to the old
corral. The little mare sighed deeply
At the rail in the wet darkness; and California returning
between two redwoods up to the house
Heard the happy jaws grinding the grain. Johnny could
mind the pigs and chickens. Christine called to her
When she entered the house, but slept again under her hand.
She laid the wet night-dress on a chair-back
And stole into the bedroom to get her clothes. A plank
creaked, and he wakened. She stood motionless
Hearing him stir in the bed. When he was quiet she stooped
after her shoes, and he said softly,
"What are you doing? Come back to bed." "It's late, I'm
going to Monterey, I must hitch up."
"You come to bed first. I been away three days. I give you
money, I take back the money
And what you do in town then?" She sighed sharply and
came to the bed.

He reaching his hands from it

Felt the cool curve and firmness of her flank, and half rising
caught her by the long wet hair.
She endured, and to hasten the act she feigned desire; she
had not for long, except in dream, felt it.
Yesterday's drunkenness made him sluggish and exacting;
she saw, turning her head sadly,
The windows were bright gray with dawn; he embraced her
still, stopping to talk about the stallion.
At length she was permitted to put on her clothes. Clear
daylight over the steep hills;
Gray-shining cloud over the tops of the redwoods; the winter
stream sang loud; the wheels of the buggy
Slipped in deep slime, ground on washed stones at the road-
edge. Down the hill the wrinkled river smothered the ford.
You must keep to the bed of stones: she knew the way by
willow and alder: the buckskin halted mid-stream,
Shuddering, the water her own color washing up to the
traces; but California, drawing up
Her feet out of the whirl onto the seat of the buggy swung
the whip over the yellow water
And drove to the road.

 All morning the clouds were racing north-
ward like a river. At noon they thickened.
When California faced the southwind home from Monterey
it was heavy with level rainfall.
She looked seaward from the foot of the valley; red rays
cried sunset from a trumpet of streaming
Cloud over Lobos, the southwest occident of the solstice.
Twilight came soon, but the tired mare
Feared the road more than the whip. Mile after mile of slow
gray twilight.

 Then, quite suddenly, darkness.

"Christine will be asleep. It is Christmas Eve. The ford.
That hour of daylight wasted this morning!"
She could see nothing; she let the reins lie on the dashboard
and knew at length by the cramp of the wheels
And the pitch down, they had reached it. Noise of wheels
on stones, splashing of hooves in water; a world
Of sounds; no sight; the gentle thunder of water; the mare
snorting, dipping her head, one knew,
To look for footing, in the blackness, under the stream. The
hushing and creaking of the sea-wind
In the passion of invisible willows.

The mare stood still; the woman
shouted to her; spared whip,
For a false leap would lose the track of the ford. She stood.
"The baby's things," thought California,
"Under the seat: the water will come over the floor"; and
rising in the midst of the water
She tilted the seat; fetched up the doll, the painted wooden
chickens, the wooly bear, the book
Of many pictures, the box of sweets: she brought them all
from under the seat and stored them, trembling,
Under her clothes, about the breasts, under the arms; the
corners of the cardboard boxes
Cut into the soft flesh; but with a piece of rope for a girdle
and wound about the shoulders
All was made fast. The mare stood still as if asleep in the
midst of the water. Then California
Reached out a hand over the stream and fingered her rump;
the solid wet convexity of it
Shook like the beat of a great heart. "What are you waiting
for?" But the feel of the animal surface
Had wakened a dream, obscured real danger with a dream
of danger. "What for? for the water-stallion

To break out of the stream, that is what the rump strains for,
him to come up flinging foam sidewise,
Fore-hooves in air, crush me and the rig and curl over his
woman." She flung out with the whip then;
The mare plunged forward. The buggy drifted sidelong:
was she off ground? Swimming? No: by the splashes.
The driver, a mere prehensile instinct, clung to the sideirons
of the seat and felt the force
But not the coldness of the water, curling over her knees,
breaking up to the waist
Over her body. They'd turned. The mare had turned up
stream and was wallowing back into shoal water.
Then California dropped her forehead to her knees, having
seen nothing, feeling a danger,
And felt the brute weight of a branch of alder, the pendulous
light leaves brush her bent neck
Like a child's fingers. The mare burst out of water and
stopped on the slope to the ford. The woman climbed down
Between the wheels and went to her head. "Poor Dora," she
called her by her name, "there, Dora. Quietly,"
And led her around, there was room to turn on the margin,
the head to the gentle thunder of the water.
She crawled on hands and knees, felt for the ruts, and
shifted the wheels into them. "You can see, Dora.
I can't. But this time you'll go through it." She climbed into
the seat and shouted angrily. The mare
Stopped, her two forefeet in the water. She touched with the
whip. The mare plodded ahead and halted.
Then California thought of prayer: "Dear little Jesus,
Dear baby Jesus born to-night, your head was shining
Like silver candles. I've got a baby too, only a girl. You had
light wherever you walked.

Dear baby Jesus give me light." Light streamed: rose, gold,
rich purple, hiding the ford like a curtain.
The gentle thunder of water was a noise of wing-feathers, the
fans of paradise lifting softly.
The child afloat on radiance had a baby face, but the angels
had birds' heads, hawks' heads,
Bending over the baby, weaving a web of wings about him.
He held in the small fat hand
A little snake with golden eyes, and California could see
clearly on the under radiance
The mare's pricked ears, a sharp black fork against the shin-
ing light-fall. But it dropped; the light of heaven
Frightened poor Dora. She backed; swung up the water,
And nearly oversetting the buggy turned and scrambled
backward; the iron wheel-tires rang on boulders.

Then California weeping climbed between the wheels. Her
wet clothes and the toys packed under
Dragged her down with their weight; she stripped off cloak
and dress and laid the baby's things in the buggy;
Brought Johnny's whisky out from under the seat; wrapped
all in the dress, bottles and toys, and tied them
Into a bundle that would sling over her back. She unhar-
nessed the mare, hurting her fingers
Against the swollen straps and the wet buckles. She tied the
pack over her shoulders, the cords
Crossing her breasts, and mounted. She drew up her shift
about her waist and knotted it, naked thighs
Clutching the sides of the mare, bare flesh to the wet withers,
and caught the mane with her right hand,
The looped-up bridle-reins in the other. "Dora, the baby gives
you light." The blinding radiance

Hovered the ford. "Sweet baby Jesus give us light." Cataracts
of light and Latin singing
Fell through the willows; the mare snorted and reared: the
roar and thunder of the invisible water;
The night shaking open like a flag, shot with the flashes; the
baby face hovering; the water
Beating over her shoes and stockings up to the bare thighs;
and over them, like a beast
Lapping her belly; the wriggle and pitch of the mare swim-
ming; the drift, the sucking water; the blinding
Light above and behind with not a gleam before, in the
throat of darkness; the shock of the fore-hooves
Striking bottom, the struggle and surging lift of the
haunches. She felt the water streaming off her
From the shoulders down; heard the great strain and sob of
the mare's breathing, heard the horseshoes grind on gravel.
When California came home the dog at the door snuffed at
her without barking; Christine and Johnny
Both were asleep; she did not sleep for hours, but kindled
fire and knelt patiently over it,
Shaping and drying the dear-bought gifts for Christmas
morning.

She hated (she thought) the proud-necked stallion.
He'd lean the big twin masses of his breast on the rail, his
red-brown eyes flash the white crescents,
She admired him then, she hated him for his uselessness,
serving nothing
But Johnny's vanity. Horses were too cheap to breed. She
thought, if he could range in freedom,
Shaking the red-roan mane for a flag on the bare hills.

A man

brought up a mare in April;

Then California, though she wanted to watch, stayed with
Christine indoors. When the child fretted
The mother told her once more about the miracle of the
ford; her prayers to the little Jesus
The Christmas Eve when she was bringing the gifts home;
the appearance, the lights, the Latin singing,
The thunder of wing-feathers and water, the shining child,
the cataracts of splendor down the darkness.
"A little baby," Christine asked, "the God is a baby?" "The
child of God. That was his birthday.
His mother was named Mary: we pray to her too: God came
to her. He was not the child of a man
Like you or me. God was his father: she was the stallion's
wife—what did I say—God's wife,"
She said with a cry, lifting Christine aside, pacing the planks
of the floor. "She is called more blessed
Than any woman. She was so good, she was more loved."
"Did God live near her house?" "He lives
Up high, over the stars; he ranges on the bare blue hill of
the sky." In her mind a picture
Flashed, of the red-roan mare shaken out for a flag on the
bare hills, and she said quickly, "He's more
Like a great man holding the sun in his hand." Her mind
giving her words the lie, "But no one
Knows, only the shining and the power. The power, the
terror, the burning fire covered her over . . ."
"Was she burnt up, mother?" "She was so good and lovely,
she was the mother of the little Jesus.
If you are good nothing will hurt you." "What did she
think?" "She loved, she was not afraid of the hooves—
Hands that had made the hills and sun and moon, and the
sea and the great redwoods, the terrible strength,

She gave herself without thinking." "You only saw the baby, mother?" "Yes, and the angels about him, The great wild shining over the black river." Three times she had walked to the door, three times returned, And now the hand that had thrice hung on the knob, full of prevented action, twisted the cloth Of the child's dress that she had been mending. "Oh, Oh, I've torn it." She struck at the child and then embraced her Fiercely, the small blond sickly body.

Johnny came in, his face reddened as if he had stood Near fire, his eyes triumphing. "Finished," he said, and looked with malice at Christine. "I go Down valley with Jim Carrier; owes me five dollar, fifteen I charge him, he brought ten in his pocket. Has grapes on the ranch, maybe I take a barrel red wine instead of money. Be back to-morrow. To-morrow night I tell you— Eh, Jim," he laughed over his shoulder, "I say to-morrow evening I show her how the red fellow act, the big fellow. When I come home." She answered nothing, but stood In front of the door, holding the little hand of her daughter, in the path of sun between the redwoods, While Johnny tied the buckskin mare behind Carrier's buggy, and bringing saddle and bridle tossed them Under the seat. Jim Carrier's mare, the bay, stood with drooped head and started slowly, the men Laughing and shouting at her; their voices could be heard down the steep road, after the noise Of the iron-hooped wheels died from the stone. Then one might hear the hush of the wind in the tall redwoods, The tinkle of the April brook; deep in its hollow.

Humanity is the

start of the race; I say
Humanity is the mold to break away from, the crust to break
through, the coal to break into fire,
The atom to be split.

Tragedy that breaks man's face and a white
fire flies out of it; vision that fools him
Out of his limits, desire that fools him out of his limits,
unnatural crime, inhuman science,
Slit eyes in the mask; wild loves that leap over the walls of
nature, the wild fence-vaulter science,
Useless intelligence of far stars, dim knowledge of the spin-
ning demons that make an atom,
These break, these pierce, these deify, praising their God
shrilly with fierce voices: not in man's shape
He approves the praise, he that walks lightning-naked on the
Pacific, that laces the suns with planets,
The heart of the atom with electrons: what is humanity in
this cosmos? For him, the last
Least taint of a trace in the dregs of the solution; for itself,
the mold to break away from, the coal
To break into fire, the atom to be split.

After the child slept, after
the leopard-footed evening
Had glided oceanward, California turned the lamp to its least
flame and glided from the house.
She moved sighing, like a loose fire, backward and forward
on the smooth ground by the door.
She heard the night-wind that draws down the valley like the
draught in a flue under clear weather
Whisper and toss in the tall redwoods; she heard the tinkle
of the April brook deep in its hollow.

Cooled by the night the odors that the horses had left behind
were in her nostrils; the night
Whitened up the bare hill; a drift of coyotes by the river
cried bitterly against moonrise;
Then California ran to the old corral, the empty one where
they kept the buckskin mare,
And leaned, and bruised her breasts on the rail, feeling the
sky whiten. When the moon stood over the hill
She stole to the house. The child breathed quietly. Herself:
to sleep? She had seen Christ in the night at Christmas.
The hills were shining open to the enormous night of the
April moon: empty and empty,
The vast round backs of the bare hills? If one should ride
up high might not the Father himself
Be seen brooding His night, cross-legged, chin in hand,
squatting on the last dome? More likely
Leaping the hills, shaking the red-roan mane for a flag on the
bare hills. She blew out the lamp.
Every fiber of flesh trembled with faintness when she came
to the door; strength lacked, to wander
Afoot into the shining of the hill, high enough, high enough
... the hateful face of a man had taken
The strength that might have served her, the corral was
empty. The dog followed her, she caught him by the collar,
Dragged him in fierce silence back to the door of the house,
latched him inside.

It was like daylight
Out-doors and she hastened without faltering down the foot-
path, through the dark fringe of twisted oak-brush,
To the open place in a bay of the hill. The dark strength of
the stallion had heard her coming; she heard him
Blow the shining air out of his nostrils, she saw him in the
white lake of moonlight

Move like a lion along the timbers of the fence, shaking the
nightfall
Of the great mane; his fragrance came to her; she leaned on
the fence;
He drew away from it, the hooves making soft thunder in the
trodden soil.
Wild love had trodden it, his wrestling with the stranger, the
shame of the day
Had stamped it into mire and powder when the heavy fet
locks
Strained the soft flanks. "Oh, if I could bear you!
If I had the strength. O great God that came down to
Mary, gently you came. But I will ride him
Up into the hill, if he throws me, if he tramples me, is it not
my desire
To endure death?" She climbed the fence, pressing her body
against the rail, shaking like fever,
And dropped inside to the soft ground. He neither threat-
ened her with his teeth nor fled from her coming,
And lifting her hand gently to the upflung head she caught
the strap of the headstall,
That hung under the quivering chin. She unlooped the halter
from the high strength of the neck
And the arch the storm-cloud mane hung with live darkness.
He stood; she crushed her breasts
On the hard shoulder, an arm over the withers, the other
under the mass of his throat, and murmuring
Like a mountain dove, "If I could bear you." No way, no
help, a gulf in nature. She murmured, "Come,
We will run on the hill. O beautiful, O beautiful," and led
him to the gate and flung the bars on the ground. He threw
his head downward

To snuff at the bars; and while he stood, she catching mane
and withers with all sudden contracture
And strength of her lithe body, leaped, clung hard, and was
mounted: He had been ridden before; he did not
Fight the weight but ran like a stone falling;
Broke down the slope into the moon-glass of the stream, and
flattened to his neck
She felt the branches of a buck-eye tree fly over her, saw the
wall of the oak-scrub
End her world: but he turned there, the matted branches
Scraped her right knee, the great slant shoulders
Laboring the hill-slope, up, up, the clear hill. Desire had died
in her
At the first rush, the falling like death, but now it revived,
She feeling between her thighs the labor of the great engine,
the running muscles, the hard swiftness,
She riding the savage and exultant strength of the world.
Having topped the thicket he turned eastward,
Running less wildly; and now at length he felt the halter
when she drew on it; she guided him upward;
He stopped and grazed on the great arch and pride of the
hill, the silent calvary. A dwarfish oakwood
Climbed the other slope out of the dark of the unknown
canyon beyond; the last wind-beaten bush of it
Crawled up to the height, and California slipping from her
mount tethered him to it. She stood then,
Shaking. Enormous films of moonlight
Trailed down from the height. Space, anxious whiteness,
vastness. Distant beyond conception the shining ocean
Lay light like a haze along the ledge and doubtful world's
end. Little vapors gleaming, and little
Darknesses on the far chart underfoot symbolized wood and
valley; but the air was the element, the moon-

Saturate arcs and spires of the air.

Here is solitude, here on the

calvary, nothing conscious

But the possible God and the cropped grass, no witness, no
eye but that misformed one, the moon's past fullness.

Two figures on the shining hill, woman and stallion, she
kneeling to him, brokenly adoring.

He cropping the grass, shifting his hooves, or lifting the long
head to gaze over the world,

Tranquil and powerful. She prayed aloud, "O God, I am not
good enough, O fear, O strength, I am dragged.

Johnny and other men have had me, and O clean power!

Here am I," she said, falling before him,

And crawled to his hooves. She lay a long while, as if asleep,
in reach of the fore-hooves, weeping. He avoided

Her head and the prone body. He backed at first; but later
plucked the grass that grew by her shoulder.

The small dark head under his nostrils: a small round stone,
that smelt human, black hair growing from it:

The skull shut the light in it: it was not possible for any eyes
To know what throbbed and shone under the sutures of the
skull, or a shell full of lightning

Had scared the roan strength, and he'd have broken tether,
screaming, and run for the valley.

The atom bounds-breaking,

Nucleus to sun, electrons to planets, with recognition

Not praying, self-equaling, the whole to the whole, the
microcosm

Not entering nor accepting entrance, more equally, more
utterly, more incredibly conjugate

With the other extreme and greatness; passionately percep-
tive of identity....

The fire threw up figures

And symbols meanwhile, racial myths formed and dissolved
in it, the phantom rulers of humanity
That without being are yet more real than what they are
born of, and without shape, shape that which makes them:
The nerves and the flesh go by shadowlike, the limbs and the
lives shadowlike, these shadows remain, these shadows
To whom temples, to whom churches, to whom labors and
wars, visions and dreams are dedicate:
Out of the fire in the small round stone that black moss covered,
a crucified man writhed up in anguish;
A woman covered by a huge beast in whose mane the stars
were netted, sun and moon were his eyeballs,
Smiled under the unendurable violation, her throat swollen
with the storm and blood-flecks gleaming
On the stretched lips; a woman—no, a dark water, split by
jets of lightning, and after a season
What floated up out of the furrowed water, a boat, a fish, a
fire-globe?

It had wings, the creature,
And flew against the fountain of lightning, fell burnt out of
the cloud back to the bottomless water . . .
Figures and symbols, castlings of the fire, played in her
brain; but the white fire was the essence,
The burning in the small round shell of bone that black hair
covered, that lay by the hooves on the hilltop.

She rose at length, she unknotted the halter; she walked and
led the stallion; two figures, woman and stallion,
Came down the silent emptiness of the dome of the hill, under
the cataract of the moonlight.

The next night there was moon through cloud. Johnny had
returned half drunk toward evening, and California

Who had known him for years with neither love nor loathing
to-night hating him had let the child Christine
Play in the light of the lamp for hours after her bedtime;
who fell asleep at length on the floor
Beside the dog; then Johnny: "Put her to bed." She gathered
the child against her breasts, she laid her
In the next room, and covered her with a blanket. The
window was white, the moon had risen. The mother
Lay down by the child, but after a moment Johnny stood in
the doorway. "Come drink." He had brought home
Two jugs of wine slung from the saddle, part payment for
the stallion's service; a pitcher of it
Was on the table, and California sadly came and emptied her
glass. Whisky, she thought,
Would have erased him till to-morrow; the thin red wine. . . .
"We have a good evening," he laughed, pouring it.
"One glass yet then I show you what the red fellow did."
She moving toward the house-door his eyes
Followed her, the glass filled and the red juice ran over the
table. When it struck the floor-planks
He heard and looked. "Who stuck the pig?" he muttered
stupidly, "here's blood, here's blood," and trailed his fingers
In the red lake under the lamplight. While he was looking
down the door creaked, she had slipped out-doors,
And he, his mouth curving like a faun's, imagined the chase
under the solemn redwoods, the panting
And unresistant victim caught in a dark corner. He emptied
the glass and went out-doors
Into the dappled lanes of moonlight. No sound but the
April brook's. "Hey Bruno," he called, "find her.
Bruno, go find her." The dog after a little understood and
quested, the man following.

When California crouching by an oak-bush above the house
heard them come near she darted
To the open slope and ran down hill. The dog barked at her
heels, pleased with the game, and Johnny
Followed in silence. She ran down to the new corral, she saw
the stallion
Move like a lion along the timbers of the fence, the dark
arched neck shaking the nightfall
Of the great mane; she threw herself prone and writhed
under the bars, his hooves backing away from her
Made muffled thunder in the soft soil. She stood in the midst
of the corral, panting, but Johnny
Paused at the fence. The dog ran under it, and seeing the
stallion move, the woman standing quiet,
Danced after the beast, with white-toothed feints and dashes.
When Johnny saw the formidable dark strength
Recoil from the dog, he climbed up over the fence.

The child Christine waked when her mother left her
And lay half-dreaming, in the half-waking dream she saw
the ocean come up out of the west
And cover the world, she looked up through clear water at
the tops of the redwoods. She heard the door creak
And the house empty; her heart shook her body, sitting up
on the bed, and she heard the dog
And crept toward light, where it gleamed under the crack of
the door. She opened the door, the room was empty,
The table-top was a red lake under the lamplight. The color
of it was terrible to her;
She had seen the red juice drip from a coyote's muzzle, her
father had shot one day in the hills
And carried him home over the saddle: she looked at the
rifle on the wall-rack: it was not moved:

She ran to the door, the dog was barking and the moon was
shining: she knew wine by the odor
But the color frightened her, the empty house frightened her,
she followed down hill in the white lane of moonlight
The friendly noise of the dog. She saw in the big horse's cor-
ral, on the level shoulder of the hill,
Black on white, the dark strength of the beast, the dancing
fury of the dog, and the two others.
One fled, one followed; the big one charged, rearing; one fell
under his fore-hooves. She heard her mother
Scream: without thought she ran to the house, she dragged
a chair past the red pool and climbed to the rifle,
Got it down from the wall and lugged it somehow through
the door and down the hillside, under the hard weight
Sobbing. Her mother stood by the rails of the corral, she
gave it to her. On the far side
The dog flashed at the plunging stallion; in the midst of the
space the man, slow-moving, like a hurt worm
Crawling, dragged his body by inches toward the fence-line.
Then California, resting the rifle
On the top rail, without doubting, without hesitance,
Aimed for the leaping body of the dog, and when it stood,
fired. It snapped, rolled over, lay quiet.
"O mother, you've hit Bruno!" "I couldn't see the sights in
the moonlight," she answered quietly. She stood
And watched, resting the rifle-butt on the ground. The stal-
lion wheeled, freed from his torment, the man
Lurched up to his knees, wailing a thin and bitter bird's cry,
and the roan thunder
Struck; hooves left nothing alive but teeth tore up the ren-
nant. "O mother, shoot, shoot!" Yet California
Stood carefully watching, till the beast having fed all his fury
stretched neck to utmost, head high,

And wrinkled back the upper lip from the teeth, yawning
obscene disgust over—not a man—
A smear on the moon-lake earth: then California moved by
some obscure human fidelity
Lifted the rifle. Each separate nerve-cell of her brain flaming
the stars fell from their places
Crying in her mind: she fired three times before the haunches
crumpled sidewise, the forelegs stiffening,
And the beautiful strength settled to earth: she turned then
on her little daughter the mask of a woman
Who has killed God. The night-wind veering, the smell of
the spilt wine drifted down hill from the house.

THE TOWER BEYOND TRAGEDY

I

You'd never have thought the Queen was Helen's sister—
Troy's burning-flower from Sparta, the beautiful sea-flower

Cut in clear stone, crowned with the fragrant golden mane,
she the ageless, the uncontaminable—

This Clytemnestra was her sister, low-statured, fierce-lipped,
not dark nor blond, greenish-gray-eyed,

Sinewed with strength, you saw, under the purple folds of
the queen-cloak, but craftier than queenly,

Standing between the gilded wooden porch-pillars, great
steps of stone above the steep street,

Awaiting the King.

Most of his men were quartered on the
town; he, clanking bronze, with fifty

And certain captives, came to the stair. The Queen's men
were a hundred in the street and a hundred

Lining the ramp, eighty on the great flags of the porch; she
raising her white arms the spear-butts

Thundered on the stone, and the shields clashed; eight shining
clarions

Let fly from the wide window over the entrance the wild-
birds of their metal throats, air-cleaving

Over the King come home. He raised his thick burnt-colored
beard and smiled; then Clytemnestra,

Gathering the robe, setting the golden-sandaled feet carefully, stone by stone, descended
One half the stair. But one of the captives marred the comeliness of that embrace with a cry
Gull-shrill, blade-sharp, cutting between the purple cloak and the bronze plates, then Clytemnestra:
Who was it? The King answered: A piece of our goods out of the snatch of Asia, a daughter of the king,
So treat her kindly and she may come into her wits again.
Eh, you keep state here, my queen.
You've not been the poorer for me.—In heart, in the widowed chamber, dear, she pale replied, though the slaves
Toiled, the spearmen were faithful. What's her name, the slave-girl's?

AGAMEMNON Come up the stair. They tell me my kinsman's Lodged himself on you.

CLYTEMNESTRA Your cousin Ægisthus? He was out of refuge, flits between here and Tiryns.

Dear: the girl's name?

AGAMEMNON Cassandra. We've a hundred or so other captives; besides two hundred
Rotted in the hulls,—they tell odd stories about you and your guest: eh? no matter:—the ships
Ooze pitch and the August road smokes dirt, I smell like an old shepherd's goatskin, you'll have bath-water?

CLYTEMNESTRA

They're making it hot. Come, my lord. My hands will pour it. *(They enter the palace.)*

CASSANDRA

In the holy city,
In Troy, when the stone was standing walls and the ash
Was painted and carved wood and pictured curtains,
And those lived that are dead, they had caged a den

Of wolves out of the mountain, and I a maiden
Was led to see them: it stank and snarled,
The smell was the smell here, the eyes were the eyes
Of steep Mycenæ: O God guardian of wanderers
Let me die easily.
So cried Cassandra the daughter of King Priam, treading the
steps of the palace at Mycenæ,
Swaying like a drunken woman, drunk with the rolling of
the ship, and with tears, and with prophecy.
The stair may yet be seen, among the old stones that are
Mycenæ; tall dark Cassandra, the prophetess,
The beautiful girl with whom a God bargained for love,
high-nurtured, captive, shamefully stained
With the ship's filth and the sea's, rolled her dark head upon
her shoulders like a drunken woman
And trod the great stones of the stair. The captives, she
among them, were ranked into a file
On the flagged porch, between the parapet and the spear-
men. The people below shouted for the King,
King Agamemnon, returned conqueror, after the ten years
of battle and death in Asia.
Then cried Cassandra:
Good spearmen you did not kill my father, not you
Violated my mother with the piercing
That makes no life in the womb, not you defiled
My tall blond brothers with the masculine lust
That strikes its loved one standing,
And leaves him what no man again nor a girl
Ever will gaze upon with the eyes of desire:
Therefore you'll tell me
Whether it's an old custom in the Greek country
The cow goring the bull, break the inner door back
And see in what red water how cloaked your King

Bathes, and my brothers are avenged a little.
 One said: Captive be quiet. And she: What have I to be
 quiet for, you will not believe me.
 Such wings my heart spreads when the red runs out of any
 Greek, I must let the bird fly. O soldiers
 He that mishandled me dies! The first, one of your two
 brute Ajaxes, that threw me backward
 On the temple flagstones, a hard bride-bed, I enduring him
 heard the roofs of my city breaking,
 The roar of flames and spearmen: what came to Ajax? Out
 of a cloud the loud-winged falcon lightning
 Came on him shipwrecked, clapped its wings about him,
 clung to him, the violent flesh burned and the bones
 Broke from each other in that passion; and now this one,
 returned safe, the Queen is his lightning.
 While she yet spoke a slave with haggard eyes darted from
 the door; there were hushed cries and motions
 In the inner dark of the great hall. Then the Queen Clytem-
 nestra issued, smiling. She drew
 Her cloak up, for the brooch on the left shoulder was broken;
 the fillet of her hair had come unbound;
 Yet now she was queenly at length; and standing at the stair-
 head spoke: Men of Mycenæ, I have made
 sacrifice for the joy this day has brought to us, the King
 come home, the enemy fallen, fallen,
 In the ashes of Asia. I have made sacrifice. I made the prayer
 with my own lips, and struck the bullock
 With my own hand. The people murmured together, She's
 not a priestess, the Queen is not a priestess,
 What has she done there, what wild sayings
 Make wing in the Queen's throat?

CLYTEMNESTRA

I have something to tell you.

Too much joy is a message-bearer of misery.

A little is good; but come too much and it devours us. Therefore we give of a great harvest
Sheaves to the smiling Gods; and therefore out of a full cup
we pour the quarter. No man
Dare take all that God sends him, whom God favors, or destruction
Rides into the house in the last basket. I have been twelve
years your shepherdess, I the Queen have ruled you
And I am accountable for you.

CASSANDRA

Why should a man kill his own mother?
The cub of the lion being grown
Will fight with the lion, but neither lion nor wolf
Nor the unclean jackal
Bares tooth against the womb that he dropped out of:
Yet I have seen—

CLYTEMNESTRA

Strike that captive woman with your hand, spearman; and
then if the spirit
Of the she-wolf in her will not quiet, with the butt of the
spear.

CASSANDRA

—the blade in the child's hand

Enter the breast that the child sucked—that woman's—
The left breast that the robe has dropped from, for the brooch
is broken,
That very hillock of whiteness, and she crying, she kneeling—

*(The spearman who is nearest CASSANDRA covers her
mouth with his hand.)*

CLYTEMNESTRA

My sister's beauty entered Troy with too much gladness.
They forgot to make sacrifice.

Therefore destruction entered; therefore the daughters of
Troy cry out in strange dispersals, and this one
Grief has turned mad. I will not have that horror march
under the lion-gate of Mycenæ
That split the citadel of Priam. Therefore I say I have made
sacrifice; I have subtracted
A fraction from immoderate joy. For consider, my people,
How unaccountably God has favored the city and brought
home the army. King Agamemnon,
My dear, my husband, my lord and yours,
Is yet not such a man as the Gods love; but insolent, fierce,
overbearing, whose folly
Brought many times many great evils
On all the heads and fighting hopes of the Greek force. Why,
even before the fleet made sail,
While yet it gathered on Bœotian Aulis, this man offended.
He slew one of the deer
Of the sacred herd of Artemis, out of pure impudence, hunt-
er's pride that froths in a young boy
Laying nock to string of his first bow: this man, grown,
a grave king, leader of the Greeks.
The angry Goddess
Blew therefore from the horn of 'the Trojan shore storm with-
out end, no slackening, no turn, no slumber
Of the eagle bound to break the oars of the fleet and split the
hulls venturing: you know what answer
Calchas the priest gave: his flesh must pay whose hand did
the evil—his flesh! mine also. His? My daughter.
They knew that of my three there was one that I loved.
Blameless white maid, my Iphigenia, whose throat the knife,
Whose delicate soft throat the thing that cuts sheep open was
drawn across by a priest's hand
And the soft-colored lips drained bloodless

That had clung here—here—Oh!

(Drawing the robe from her breasts.)

These feel soft, townsmen; these are red at the tips, they have neither blackened nor turned marble.

King Agamemnon hoped to pillow his black-haired breast upon them, my husband, that mighty conqueror,

Come home with glory. He thought they were still a woman's, they appear a woman's. I'll tell you something.

Since fawn slaughtered for slaughtered fawn evened the debt these that feel soft and warm are wounding ice,

They ache with their hardness . . .

Shall I go on and count the other follies of the King? The insolences to God and man

That brought down plague, and brought Achilles' anger against the army? Yet God brought home a remnant

Against all hope: therefore rejoice.

But lest too much rejoicing slay us I have made sacrifice. A little girl's brought you over the sea.

What could be great enough for safe return? A sheep's death? A bull's? What thank-offering?

All these captives, battered from the ships, bruised with captivity, damaged flesh and forlorn minds?

God requires wholeness in the victim. You dare not think what he demands. I dared. I, I

Dared.

Men of the Argolis, you that went over the sea and you that guarded the home coasts.

And high stone war-belts of the cities: remember how many spearmen these twelve years have called me

Queen, and have loved me, and been faithful, and *remain* faithful. What I bring you is accomplished.

VOICES

King Agamemnon. The King. We will hear the King.

CLYTEMNESTRA What I bring you is accomplished.
Accept it, the cities are at peace, the ways are safe between
 them, the Gods favor us. Refuse it . . .

You will not refuse it . . .

VOICES The King. We will hear the King. Let us
 see the King.

CLYTEMNESTRA

You will not refuse it; I have my faithful. They would run,
 the red rivers,

From the gate and by the graves through every crooked
 street of the great city, they would run in the pasture

Outside the walls: and on this stair: stemmed at this en-
 trance—

CASSANDRA

Ah, sister, do you also behold visions? I was watching red
 water—

CLYTEMNESTRA

Be wise, townsmen. As for the King: slaves will bring him
 to you when he has bathed; you will see him.

The slaves will carry him on a litter, he has learned Asian
 ways in Asia, too great a ruler

To walk, like common spearmen.

CASSANDRA Who is that, standing behind
 you, Clytemnestra? What God
Dark in the doorway?

CLYTEMNESTRA Deal *you* with your own demons. You
know what I have done, captive. You know

I am holding lions with my two eyes: if I turn and loose
 them . . .

CASSANDRA It is . . . the King. There! There! Ah!

CLYTEMNESTRA

Or if I should make any move to increase confusion. If I
 should say for example, Spearman

The soldiers cannot know some terrible thing may not have happened; your men and the King's grin
Like wolves over the kill, the whole city totters on a sword-edge over sudden—

CASSANDRA (*screaming*)

Drive him off me! Pity, pity!

I have no power; I thought when he was dead another man would use me, your Greek custom,

Not he, he, newly slain.

He is driving me out, he enters, he possesses, this is my last defilement. Ah... Greeks...

Pity Cassandra!

With the voice the spirit seemed to fly out.

She upflung her shining

Arms with the dreadful and sweet gesture of a woman surrendering utterly to force and love,

She in the eyes of the people, like a shameless woman, and fell writhing, and the dead King's soul

Entered her body. In that respite the Queen:

Captain: and

you, soldiers, that shift unsoldierly

The weapons that should be upright, at attention, like stiff grass-blades: and you, people of Mycenæ:

While this one maddened, and you muttered, echoing together, and you, soldier, with anxious questions

Increased confusion: who was it that stood firm, who was it that stood silent, who was it that held

With her two eyes the whole city from splitting wide asunder? Your Queen was it? I am your Queen,

And now I will answer what you asked... It is true...

He has died... I am the Queen.

My little son Orestes will grow up and govern you.

While she

spoke the body of Cassandra
Arose among the shaken spears, taller than the spears, and
stood among the waving spears
Stone-quiet, like a high war-tower in a windy pinewood,
but deadly to look at, with blind and tyrannous
Eyes; and the Queen: All is accomplished; and if you are
wise, people of Mycenæ: quietness is wisdom.
No tumult will call home a dead man out of judgment. The
end is the end. Ah, soldiers! Down spears!
What, now Troy's fallen you think there's not a foreigner in
the world bronze may quench thirst on? Lion-cubs,
If you will tear each other in the lair happy the wolves
happy the hook-nose vultures.
Call the eaters of carrion? I am your queen, I am speaking
to you, you will hear me out before you whistle
The foul beaks from the mountain nest. I tell you I will for-
get mercy if one man moves now.
I rule you, I.
The Gods have satisfied themselves in this man's death;
there shall not one drop of the blood of the city
Be shed further. I say the high Gods are content; as for the
lower,
And the great ghost of the King: my slaves will bring out
the King's body decently before you
And set it here, in the eyes of the city: spices the ships bring
from the south will comfort his spirit;
Mycenæ and Tiryns and the shores will mourn him aloud;
sheep will be slain for him; a hundred beeves
Spill their thick blood into the trenches; captives and slaves
go down to serve him, yes all these captives
Burn in the ten-day fire with him, unmeasured wine quench
it, urned in pure gold the gathered ashes

Rest forever in the sacred rock; honored; a conqueror. . . .

Slaves, bring the King out of the house.

Alas my husband! she cried, clutching the brown strands of her hair in both her hands, you have left me

A woman among lions! Ah the King's power, ah the King's victories! Weep for me, Mycenæ!

Widowed of the King!

The people stood amazed, like sheep that snuff at their dead shepherd, some hunter's ill-handled arrow having struck him from the covert, all by mischance; he is fallen on the hillside Between the oak-shadow and the stream; the sun burns his dead face, his staff lies by him, his dog

Licks his hand, whining. So, like sheep, the people Regarded that dead majesty whom the slaves brought out of the house on a gold bed, and set it Between the pillars of the porch. His royal robe covered his wounds, there was no stain

Nor discomposure.

Then that captain who had spoken before:

O Queen, before the mourning

The punishment: tell us who has done this. She raised her head, and not a woman but a lioness

Blazed at him from her eyes: Dog, she answered, dog of the army,

Who said Speak dog, and you dared speak? Justice is mine.

Then he was silent; but Cassandra's

Body standing tall among the spears, over the parapet, her body but not her spirit

Cried with a man's voice: Shall not even the stones of the stair, shall not the stones under the columns

Speak, and the towers of the great wall of my city come down against the murderess? O Mycenæ

The name of her, to say husband-slayer and bed-defiler, bitch
and wolf-bitch, king's assassin
And beast, beast, all in one breath, in one word:
spearmen
You would heap your shields over this woman and crush
her slowly, slowly, while she choked and screamed,
No, you would peel her bare and on the pavement for a
bride-bed with a spear-butt for husband
Dig the lewd womb until it burst: this for Agamemnon, this
for Ægisthus—Agh, cowards of the city
Do you stand quiet?

-CLYTEMNESTRA Truly, soldiers,
I think it is he verily. No one could invent the abominable
voice, the unspeakable gesture,
The actual raging insolence of the tyrant. I am the hand
riddled the Argolis of him.
I here, I killed him, I, justly.

THE BODY OF CASSANDRA You have heard her, you have
heard her, she has made confession.
Now if she'll show you the knife too—

CLYTEMNESTRA Here. I kept it for safety.
And, as that beast said, his blood's yet on it.
Look at it, with so little a key I unlocked the kingdom of
destruction. Stand firm, till a God
Lead home this ghost to the dark country
So many Greeks have people, through his crimes, his vio-
lence, his insolence, stand firm till that moment
And through the act of this hand and of this point no man
shall suffer anything again forever
Of Agamemnon.

THE BODY OF CASSANDRA

I say if you let this woman live, this crime go
unpunished, what man among you

Will be safe in his bed? The woman ever envies the man,
his strength, his freedom, his loves.

Her envy is like a snake beside him, all his life through,
her envy and hatred: law tames that viper:

Law dies if the Queen die not: the viper is free then,

It will be poison in your meat or a knife to bleed you sleep-
ing. They fawn and slaver over us

And then we are slain.

CLYTEMNESTRA (*to one of the slaves that carried the King's
body*)

Is my lord Ægisthus
Slain on the way? How long? How long?

(*To the people*) He

came, fat with his crimes.

Greek valor broke down Troy, your valor, soldiers, and the
brain of Odysseus, the battle-fury of Achilles,

The stubborn strength of Menelaus, the excellence of you
all: this dead man here, his pride

Ruined you a hundred times: he helped nowise, he brought
bitter destruction: but he gathered your glory

For the cloak of his shoulders. I saw him come up the stair,
I saw my child Iphigenia

Killed for his crime; I saw his harlot, the captive woman
there, crying out behind him, I saw . . .

I saw . . . I saw . . . how can I speak what crowd of the dead
faces of the faithful Greeks,

Your brothers, dead of his crimes; those that perished of
plague and those that died in the lost battles

After he had soured the help of Achilles—for another har-
lot—those dead faces of your brothers,

Some black with the death-blood, many trampled under the
hooves of horses, many spotted with pestilence,

Flew all about him, all lamenting, all crying out against
him,—horrible—horrible—I gave them
Vengeance; and you freedom.

(*To the slave*) Go up and look, for
God's sake, go up to the parapets,
Look toward the mountain. Bring me word quickly, my
strength breaks,
How can I hold all the Argolis with my eyes forever? I
alone? Hell cannot hold her dead men,
Keep watch there—send me word by others—go, go!

(*To the people*) He
came triumphing.

Magnificent, abominable, all in bronze.
I brought him to the bath; my hands undid the armor;
My hands poured out the water;
Dead faces like flies buzzed all about us;
He stripped himself before me, loathsome, unclean, with
laughter;
The labors of the Greeks had made him fat, the deaths of
the faithful had swelled his belly;
I threw a cloak over him for a net and struck, struck, struck,
Blindly, in the steam of the bath; he bellowed, netted,
And bubbled in the water;
All the stone vault asweat with steam bellowed;
And I undid the net and the beast was dead, and the broad
vessel
Stank with his blood.

THE BODY OF CASSANDRA

The word! the word! O burning mind of God,
If ever I gave you bulls teach me that word, the name for
her, the name for her!

A SLAVE (*running from the door; to CLYTEMNESTRA*)

My lord Ægisthus has come down the mountain, Queen, he approaches the Lion-gate.

CLYTEMNESTRA

It is time. I am tired now.

Meet him and tell him to come in the postern doorway.

THE CAPTAIN (*on the stair: addressing the soldiers and the people below*)

Companions: before God, hating the smell of crimes, crushes the city into gray ashes

We must make haste. Judge now and act. For the husband-slayer

I say she must die, let her pay forfeit. And for the great ghost of the King, let all these captives,

But chiefly the woman Cassandra, the crier in a man's voice there, be slain upon his pyre to quiet him.

He will go down to his dark place and God will spare the city.

(*To the soldiers above, on the ramp and the porch*)

Comrades: Mycenæ is greater

Than the Queen of Mycenæ. The King is dead: let the Queen die: let the city live. Comrades,

We suffered something in Asia, on the stranger's coast, laboring for you. We dreamed of home there

In the bleak wind and drift of battle; we continued ten years, laboring and dying; we accomplished

The task set us; we gathered what will make all the Greek cities glorious, a name forever;

We shared the spoil, taking our share to enrich Mycenæ.

O but our hearts burned then, O comrades

But our hearts melted when the great oars moved the ships, the water carried us, the blue sea-waves

Slid under the black keel; I could not see them, I was blind with tears, thinking of Mycenæ.

We have come home. Behold the dear streets of our longing,

You are tired of your brown wives, draw lots for me, rabble,
thieves, there is loot here, shake the dice, thieves, a game
yet!

One of you will take the bronze and one the silver,

One the gold, and one me,

Me Clytemnestra a spoil worth having:

Kings have kissed me, this dead dog was a king, there is another

King at the gate: thieves, thieves, would not this shining

Breast brighten a sad thief's hut, roll in his bed's filth

Shiningly? You could teach me to draw water at the fountain,

A dirty child on the other hip: where are the dice? Let me
throw first, if I throw sixes

I choose my masters: closer you rabble, let me smell you.

Don't fear the knife, it has king's blood on it, I keep it for
an ornament,

It has shot its sting.

THE BODY OF CASSANDRA. Fools, fools, strike!

Are your hands dead?

CLYTEMNESTRA. You would see all of me

Before you choose whether to kill or dirtily cherish? If what
the King's used needs commending

To the eyes of thieves for thieves' use: give me room, give
me room, fellows, you'll see it is faultless.

The dress . . . there . . .

THE BODY OF CASSANDRA Fools this wide whore played wife

When she was going about to murder me the King; you,
will you let her trip you

With the harlot's trick? Strike! Make an end!

CLYTEMNESTRA I have not my sister's,

Troy's flames beauty, but I have something.

This arm, round, firm, skin without hair, polished like marble: the supple-jointed shoulders:
Men have praised the smooth neck, too,
The strong clear throat over the deep wide breasts . . .

THE BODY OF CASSANDRA

She is

buying an hour: sheep: it may be Ægisthus
Is at the Lion-gate.

CLYTEMNESTRA If he were here, Ægisthus,
I'd not be the peddler of what trifling charms I have for an
hour of life yet. You have wolves' eyes:
Yet there is something kindly about the blue ones there—
yours, young soldier, young soldier. . . . The last,
The under-garment? You won't buy me yet? This dead
dog,

The King here, never saw me naked: I had the night for
nurse: turn his head sideways, the eyes
Are only half shut. If I should touch him, and the blood
came, you'd say I had killed him. Nobody, nobody,
Killed him: his pride burst.

Ah, no one has pity!

I can serve well, I have always envied your women, the public ones.

Who takes me first? Tip that burnt log onto the flagstones,
This will be in a king's bed then. Your eyes are wolves' eyes:
So many, so many, so famishing—
I will undo it, handle me not yet, I can undo it . . .

Or I will tear it.

And when it is off me then I will be delivered to you
beasts . . .

THE BODY OF CASSANDRA

Then strip her and use her to the bones, wear her through,
kill her with it.

CLYTEMNESTRA

When it is torn

You'll say I am lovely: no one has seen before ...

It won't tear: I'll slit it with this knife—

(ÆGISTHUS, *with many spearmen, issues from the great door. CLYTEMNESTRA stabs right and left with the knife; the men are too close to strike her with their long spears.*)

CLYTEMNESTRA

It's time. Cowards, goats, goats. Here! Ægisthus!

ÆGISTHUS

I am here. What have they done?

CLYTEMNESTRA

Nothing: clear the porch: *I have done something. Drive them on the stair!*

Three of them I've scarred for life: a rough bridegroom, the rabble, met a fierce bride.

(*She catches up her robe.*)

I held them with my eyes, hours, hours. I am not tired. ...

My lord, my lover:

I have killed a twelve-point stag for a present for you: with my own hands: look, on the golden litter.

You arrive timely.

THE BODY OF CASSANDRA Tricked, stabbed, shamed, mocked
at, the spoil of a lewd woman, despised

I lie there ready for her back-stairs darling to spit on.

Tricked, stabbed, sunk in the drain

And gutter of time. I that thundered the assault, I that
mustered the Achæans. Cast out of my kingdom,

Cast out of time, out of the light.

CLYTEMNESTRA

One of the captives, dear.

It left its poor wits

Over the sea. If it annoys you I'll quiet it. But post your sentinels.

All's not safe yet, though I am burning with joy now.

THE BODY OF CASSANDRA

O single-

eyed glare of the sky

Flying southwest to the mountain: sun, through a slave's eyes,

My own broken, I see you this last day; my own darkened,
no dawn forever; the adulterers

Will swim in your warm gold, day after day; the eyes of the
murderess will possess you;

And I have gone away down: knowing that no God in the
earth nor sky loves justice; and having tasted

The toad that serves women for heart. From now on may
all bridegrooms

Marry them with swords. Those that have borne children
Their sons rape them with spears.

CLYTEMNESTRA

More yet, more, more, more,

while my hand's in? It's not a little

You easily living lords of the sky require of who'd be like
you, who'd take time in the triumph,

Build joy solid. Do we have to do everything? I have killed
what I hated:

Kill what I love? The prophetess said it, this dead man
says it: my little son, the small soft image

That squirmed in my arms be an avenger?—Love, from
your loins

Seed: I begin new, I will be childless for you. The child my
son, the child my daughter!

Though I cry I feel nothing.

ÆGISTHUS

O strongest spirit in the world.

We have dared enough, there is an end to it.

We may pass nature a little, an arrow-flight,

But two shots over the wall you come in a cloud upon the
feasting Gods, lightning and madness.

CLYTEMNESTRA

Dear: make them safe. They may try to run away, the children.
Set spears to watch them: no harm, no harm,
But stab the nurse if they go near a door. Watch them, keep
the gates, order the sentinels,
While I make myself queen over this people again. I can
do it.

THE BODY OF CASSANDRA The sun's gone; that glimmer's
The moon of the dead. The dark God calls me. Yes, God,
I'll come in a moment.

CLYTEMNESTRA (*at the head of the great stairs*)

Soldiers: townsmen: it seems

I am not at the end delivered to you: dogs, for the lion came:
the poor brown and spotted women

Will have to suffice you. But is it nothing to have come
within handling distance of the clear heaven

This dead man knew when he was young and God endured
him? Is it nothing to you?

It is something to me to have felt the fury

And concentration of you: I will not say I am grateful: I am
not angry: to be desired

Is wine even to a queen. You bathed me in it, from brow
to foot-sole, I had nearly enough.

But now remember that the dream is over. I am the Queen:
Mycenæ is my city. If you grin at me

I have spears: also Tiryns and all the country people of the
Argolis will come against you and swallow you,

Empty out these ways and walls, stock them with better sub-
jects. A rock nest for new birds here, townsfolk:

You are not essential.

THE BODY OF CASSANDRA. I hear him calling through the she-
wolf's noise, Agamemnon, Agamemnon,
The dark God calls. Some old king in a fable is it?

CLYTEMNESTRA So choose.

What choices? To reënter my service
Unpunished, no thought of things past, free of conditions . . .
Or—dine at this man's table, have new mouths made in you
to eat bronze with.

THE BODY OF CASSANDRA Who is Agamemnon?

CLYTEMNESTRA

You letting go of the sun: is it dark the land you are run-
ning away to?

THE BODY OF CASSANDRA It is dark.

CLYTEMNESTRA Is it sorrowful?

THE BODY OF CASSANDRA

There is nothing but misery.

CLYTEMNESTRA Has any man ever come back
thence? Hear *me*, not the dark God.

THE BODY OF CASSANDRA No man has ever.

CLYTEMNESTRA

Go then, go, go down. You will not choose to follow him,
people of the rock-city? No one

Will choose to follow him. I have killed: it is easy: it may
be I shall kill nearer than this yet:

But not you, townsfolk, you will give me no cause; I want
security; I want service, not blood.

I have been desired of the whole city, publicly; I want serv-
ice, not lust. You will make no sign

Of your submission; you will not give up your weapons;
neither shall your leaders be slain;

And he that flung the spear, I have forgotten his face.

ÆGISTHUS (*entering*) Dearest,
they have gone, the nurse and the children,

No one knows where.

CLYTEMNESTRA I am taming this people: send men after them. If any harm comes to the children

Bring me tokens. I will not be in doubt, I will not have the arch fall on us. I dare

What no one dares. I envy a little the dirty mothers of the city. O, O!

Nothing in me hurts. I have animal waters in my eyes, but the spirit is not wounded. Electra and Orestes

Are not to live when they are caught. Bring me sure tokens.

CASSANDRA Who is this woman like a beacon

Lit on the stair, who are these men with dogs' heads?

I have ranged time and seen no sight like this one.

CLYTEMNESTRA

Have you returned, Cassandra? . . . The dead king has gone down to his place, we may bury his leavings.

CASSANDRA

I have witnessed all the wars to be; I am not sorrowful

For one drop from the pail of desolation

Spilt on my father's city; they were carrying it forward

To water the world under the latter starlight.

CLYTEMNESTRA (*to her slaves*)

Take up the poles of the bed; reverently; careful on the stair; give him to the people. (*To the people.*) O soldiers

This was your leader; lay him with honor in the burial-chapel; guard him with the spears of victory;

Mourn him until to-morrow, when the pyre shall be built.

Ah, King of men, sleep, sleep, sleep!

... But when shall I? . . . They are after their corpse, like dogs after the butcher's cart. Cleomenes, that captain

With the big voice: Neobulus was the boy who flung the spear and missed. *I shall not miss*

When spear-flinging-time comes. . . . Captive woman, you
have seen the future, tell me my fortune.

(ÆGISTHUS comes from the doorway.)

Ægisthus,

Have your hounds got them?

ÆGISTHUS I've covered every escape with
men, they'll not slip through me. But commanded
To bring them here living.

CLYTEMNESTRA That's hard: tigresses don't do it:
I have some strength yet: don't speak of it
And I shall do it.

ÆGISTHUS It is a thing not to be done: we'll guard
them closely: but mere madness
Lies over the wall of too-much.

CLYTEMNESTRA King of Mycenæ, new-crowned
king, who was your mother?

ÆGISTHUS Pelopia.

What mark do you aim at?

CLYTEMNESTRA And your father?

ÆGISTHUS Thyestes.

CLYTEMNESTRA And her father?

ÆGISTHUS The
same man, Thyestes.

CLYTEMNESTRA

See, dearest, dearest? They love what men call crime, they
have taken her crime to be the king of Mycenæ.

Here is the stone garden of the plants that pass nature: there
is no too-much here: the monstrous

Old rocks want monstrous roots to serpent among them. I
will have security. I'd burn the standing world

Up to this hour and begin new. You think I am too much
used for a new brood? Ah, lover,

I have fountains in me. I had a fondness for the brown
cheek of that boy, the curl of his lip,
The widening blue of the doomed eyes . . . I will be spared
nothing. Come in, come in, they'll have news for us.

CASSANDRA

If anywhere in the world
Were a tower with foundations, or a treasure-chamber
With a firm vault, or a walled fortress
That stood on the years, not staggering, not moving
As the mortar were mixed with wine for water
And poppy for lime: they reel, they are all drunkards,
The piled strengths of the world: no pyramid
In bitter Egypt in the desert
But skips at moonrise; no mountain
Over the Black Sea in awful Caucasus
But whirls like a young kid, like a bud of the herd,
Under the hundredth star: I am sick after steadfastness
Watching the world cataractlike
Pour screaming onto steep ruins: for the wings of prophecy
God once my lover give me stone sandals
Planted on stone: he hates me, the God, he will never
Take home the gift of the brideless horse
The stallion, the unbitted stallion: the bed
Naked to the sky on Mount Ida,
The soft clear grass there,
Be blackened forever, may vipers and Greeks
In that glen breed
Twisting together, where the God
Come golden from the sun
Gave me for a bride-gift prophecy and I took it for a
treasure:
I a fool, I a maiden,

I would not let him touch me though love of him maddened
me
Till he fed me that poison, till he planted that fire in me,
The girdle flew loose then.

The Queen considered this rock, she gazed on the great
stone blocks of Mycenæ's acropolis;
Monstrous they seemed to her, solid they appeared to her,
safe roorage for monstrous deeds: Ah fierce one
Who knows who laid them for a snare? What people in the
world's dawn breathed on chill air and the vapor
Of their breath seemed stone and has stood and you dream
it is established? These also are a foam on the stream
Of the falling of the world: there is nothing to lay hold on:
No crime is a crime, the slaying of the King was a meeting
of two bubbles on the lip of the cataract,
One winked . . . and the killing of your children would be
nothing: I tell you for a marvel that the earth is a dancer,
The grave dark earth is less quiet than a fool's fingers,
That old one, spinning in the emptiness, blown by no wind
in vain circles, light-witted and a dancer.

CLYTEMNESTRA (*entering*)

You are prophesying: prophesy to a purpose, captive woman.
My children, the boy and the girl,
Have wandered astray, no one can find them.

CASSANDRA
lioness

Shall I tell the

Where meat is, or the she-wolf where the lambs wander
astray?

CLYTEMNESTRA But look into the darkness

And foam of the world: the boy has great tender blue eyes,
brown hair, disdainful lips, you'll know him

Roll all the Greek cities into one billow and strand in Asia
The anthers and bracts of the flower of the world?
That I have seen Egypt and Nineveh
Crumble, and a Latian village
Plant the earth with javelins? It made laws for all men, it
dissolved like a cloud.
I have also stood watching a storm of wild swans
Rise from one river-mouth . . . O force of the earth rising,
O fallings of the earth: forever no rest, not forever
From the wave and the trough, from the stream and the
slack, from growth and decay: O vulture-
Pinioned, my spirit, one flight yet, last, longest, unguided,
Try into the gulf,
Over Greece, over Rome, you have space O my spirit for the
years

II

Are not few of captivity: how many have I stood here
Among the great stones, while the Queen's people
Go in and out of the gate, wearing light linen
For summer and the wet spoils of wild beasts
In the season of storms: and the stars have changed, I have
watched
The grievous and unprayed-to constellations
Pile steaming spring and patient autumn
Over the enduring walls: but you over the walls of the
world,
Over the unquieted centuries, over the darkness-hearted
Millenniums wailing thinly to be born, O vulture-pinioned
Try into the dark,
Watch the north spawn white bodies and red-gold hair,
Race after race of beastlike warriors; and the cities
Burn, and the cities build, and new lands be uncovered

In the way of the sun to his setting . . . go on farther, what
profit

In the wars and the toils? but I say

Where are prosperous people my enemies are, as you pass
them O my spirit

Curse Athens for the joy and the marble, curse Corinth

For the wine and the purple, and Syracuse

For the gold and the ships; but Rome, Rome,

With many destructions for the corn and the laws and the
javelins, the insolence, the threefold

Abominable power: pass the humble

And the lordships of darkness, but far down

Smite Spain for the blood on the sunset gold, curse France

For the fields abounding and the running rivers, the lights
in the cities, the laughter, curse England

For the meat on the tables and the terrible gray ships, for
old laws, far dominions, there remains

A mightier to be cursed and a higher for malediction

When America has eaten Europe and takes tribute of Asia,
when the ends of the world grow aware of each other

And are dogs in one kennel, they will tear

The master of the hunt with the mouths of the pack: new
fallings, new risings, O winged one

No end of the fallings and risings? An end shall be surely,
Though unnatural things are accomplished, they breathe in
the sea's depth,

They swim in the air, they bridle the cloud-leaper lightning
to carry their messages:

Though the eagles of the east and the west and the falcons
of the north were not quieted, you have seen a white cloth

Cover the lands from the north and the eyes of the lands and
the claws of the hunters,

The mouths of the hungry with snow

Were filled, and their claws
Took hold upon ice in the pasture, a morsel of ice was their
catch in the rivers,
'That pure white quietness
Waits on the heads of the mountains, not sleep but death,
will the fire
Of burnt cities and ships in that year warm you my en-
emies? The frost, the old frost,
Like a cat with a broken-winged bird it will play with you,
It will nip and let go; you will say it is gone, but the next
Season it increases: O clean, clean,
White and most clean, colorless quietness,
Without trace, without trail, without stain in the garment
drawn down
From the poles to the girdle . . . I have known one Godhead
To my sore hurt: I am growing to come to another: O grave
and kindly
Last of the lords of the earth, I pray you lead my substance
Speedily into another shape, make me grass, Death, make
me stone,
Make me air to wander free between the stars and the
peaks; but cut humanity
Out of my being, that is the wound that festers in me,
Not captivity, not my enemies: you will heal the earth also,
Death, in your time; but speedily Cassandra.
You rock-fleas hopping in the clefts of Mycenæ,
Suckers of blood, you carrying the scepter farther, Persian,
Emathian,
Roman and Mongol and American, and you half-gods
Indian and Syrian and the third, emperors of peace, I have
seen on what stage
You sing the little tragedy; the column of the ice that was
before on one side flanks it,

The column of the ice to come closes it up on the other:
audience nor author

I have never seen yet: I have heard the silence: it is I
Cassandra,

Eight years the bitter watch-dog of these doors,
Have watched a vision

And now approach to my end. Eight years have I seen the
phantoms

Walk up and down this stair; and the rocks groan in the
night, the great stones move when no man sees them.

And I have forgotten the fine ashlar masonry of the courts
of my father. I am not Cassandra

But a counter of sunrises, permitted to live because I am
crying to die; three thousand,

Pale and red, have flowed over the towers in the wall since
I was here watching; the deep east widens,

The cold wind blows, the deep earth sighs, the dim gray
finger of light crooks at the morning star.

The palace feasted late and sleeps with its locked doors; the
last drunkard from the alleys of the city

Long has reeled home. Whose foot is this then, what
phantom

Toils on the stair?

A VOICE BELOW Is someone watching above? Good sentinel
I am only a girl beggar.

I would sit on the stair and hold my bowl.

CASSANDRA I here eight
years have begged for a thing and not received it.

THE VOICE

You are not a sentinel? You have been asking some great
boon, out of all reason.

CASSANDRA No: what the meanest
Beggar disdains to take.

THE GIRL BEGGAR Beggars disdain nothing: what is it
that they refuse you?

CASSANDRA What's given
Even to the sheep and to the bullock.

THE GIRL Men give them salt,
grass they find out for themselves.

CASSANDRA Men give them
The gift that you though a beggar have brought down from
the north to give my mistress.

THE GIRL You speak riddles.
I am starving, a crust is my desire.

CASSANDRA Your voice is young
though winds have hoarsened it, your body appears
Flexible under the rags: have you some hidden sickness, the
young men will not give you silver?

THE GIRL
I have a sickness: I will hide it until I am cured. You are
not a Greek woman?

CASSANDRA But you
Born in Mycenæ return home. And you bring gifts from
Phocis: for my once master who's dead
Vengeance; and for my mistress peace, for my master the
King peace, and, by-shot of the doom's day,
Peace for me also. But I have prayed for it.

THE GIRL I know you, I
knew you before you spoke to me, captive woman,
And I unarmed will kill you with my hands if you babble
prophecies.

That peace you have prayed for, I will bring it to you
If you utter warnings.

CASSANDRA To-day I shall have peace, you cannot
tempt me, daughter of the Queen, Electra.

Eight years ago I watched you and your brother going north
to Phocis: the Queen saw knowledge of you
Move in my eyes: I would not tell her where you were when
she commanded me: I will not betray you
To-day either: it is not doleful to me
To see before I die generations of destruction enter the
doors of Agamemnon.
Where is your brother?

ELECTRA Prophetess: you see all: I will tell
you nothing.

CASSANDRA He has well chosen his ambush,
It is true Ægisthus passes under that house to-day, to hunt
in the mountain.

ELECTRA Now I remember
Your name. Cassandra.

CASSANDRA Hush: the gray has turned yellow,
the standing beacons
Stream up from the east; they stir there in the palace;
strange, is it not, the dawn of one's last day's
Like all the others? Your brother would be fortunate if
to-day were also
The last of his.

ELECTRA He will endure his destinies; and Cassandra
hers; and Electra mine.
He has been for years like one tortured with fire: this day
will quench it.

CASSANDRA They are opening the gates: beg now.
To your trade, beggar-woman.

THE PORTER (*coming out*) Eh, pillar of miseries,
You still on guard there? Like a mare in a tight stall, never
lying down. What's this then?
A second ragged one? This at least can bend in the middle
and sit on a stone.

ELECTRA

Dear gentleman

I am not used to it, my father is dead and hunger forces me
to beg, a crust or a penny.

THE PORTER

This tall one's licensed in a manner. I think they'll not let
two bundles of rags
Camp on the stair: but if you'd come to the back door and
please me nicely: with a little washing
It'd do for a pastime.

ELECTRA

I was reared gently: I will sit here, the

King will see me,
And none mishandle me.

THE PORTER

I bear no blame for you.

I have not seen you: you came after the gates were opened.
(*He goes in.*)

CASSANDRA

O blossom of fire, bitter to men,
Watchdog of the woeful days,
How many sleepers
Bathing in peace, dreaming themselves delight,
All over the city, all over the Argolid plain, all over the
dark earth,
(Not me, a deeper draught of peace
And darker waters alone may wash me)
Do you, terrible star, star without pity,
Wolf of the east, waken to misery.
To the wants unaccomplished, to the eating desires,
To unanswered love, to hunger, to the hard edges
And mold of reality, to the whips of their masters.
They had flown away home to the happy darkness,
They were safe until sunrise.

(*King Ægisthus, with his retinue, comes from the
great door.*)

ÆGISTHUS

Even here, in the midst of the city, the early day
Has a clear savor. (*To ELECTRA*) What, are you miserable,
holding the bowl out?

We'll hear the lark to-day in the wide hills and smell the
mountain. I'd share happiness with you.

What's your best wish, girl beggar?

ELECTRA

It is covered, my lord,

how should a beggar

Know what to wish for beyond a crust and a dark corner
and a little kindness?

ÆGISTHUS

Why do you tremble?

ELECTRA

I was reared gently; my father is dead.

ÆGISTHUS

Stand up: will you

take service here in the house? What country

Bred you gently and proved ungentle to you?

ELECTRA

I have wan-

dered north from the Eurotas, my lord,

Begging at farmsteads.

ÆGISTHUS

The Queen's countrywoman then,

she'll use you kindly. She'll be coming

In a moment, then I'll speak for you.—Did you bid them
yoke the roans into my chariot, Menalcas,

The two from Orchomenus?

ONE OF THE RETINUE

Yesterday evening, my lord,

I sent to the stable.

ÆGISTHUS

They cost a pretty penny, we'll see how
they carry it.—She's coming: hold up your head, girl.

(*CLYTEMNESTRA, with two serving-women, comes from
the door.*)

CLYTEMNESTRA

Good hunt, dearest. Here's a long idle day for me to look
to. Kill early, come home early.

ÆGISTHUS

There's a poor creature on the step who's been reared nicely
and slipped into misery. I said you'd feed her,
And maybe find her a service. Farewell, sweet one.

CLYTEMNESTRA Where did she come from? How long have
you been here?

ÆGISTHUS She says she has begged her way up from Sparta.
The horses are stamping on the cobbles, good-by, good-by.
(*He goes down the stairs with his huntsmen.*)

CLYTEMNESTRA Good-by, dearest. Well. Let me see your
face.

ELECTRA It is filthy to look at. I am ashamed.

CLYTEMNESTRA (*to one of her serving-women*) Leucippe do
you think this is a gayety of my lord's, he's not used to be
so kindly to beggars?

—Let me see your face.

LEUCIPPE She is very dirty, my lady. It is possible one of the
house-boys...

CLYTEMNESTRA I say draw that rag back, let me see your
face. I'd have him whipped then.

ELECTRA It was only in hope that someone would put a crust
in the bowl, your majesty, for I am starving. I didn't think
your majesty would see me.

CLYTEMNESTRA Draw back the rag.

ELECTRA I am very faint and starving but I will go down;
I am ashamed.

CLYTEMNESTRA Stop her, Corinna. Fetch the porter, Leu-
cippe. You will not go so easily. (*ELECTRA sinks down on
the steps and lies prone, her head covered.*) I am aging
out of queenship indeed, when even the beggars refuse

my bidding. (*LEUCIPPE comes in with the porter.*) You have a dirty stair, porter. How long has this been here?

THE PORTER O my lady it has crept up since I opened the doors, it was not here when I opened the doors.

CLYTEMNESTRA Lift it up and uncover its face. What is that cry in the city? Stop: silent: I heard a cry . . .

Prophetess, your nostrils move like a dog's, what is that shouting? . . .

I have grown weak, I am exhausted, things frighten me . . . Tell her to be gone, Leucippe, I don't wish to see her, I don't wish to see her.

(*ELECTRA rises.*)

ELECTRA Ah, Queen, I will show you my face.

CLYTEMNESTRA No . . . no . . . be gone.

ELECTRA (*uncovering her face*)

Mother: I have come home: I am humbled. This house keeps a dark welcome

For those coming home out of far countries.

CLYTEMNESTRA I won't look: how could I know anyone? I am old and shaking.

He said, Over the wall beyond nature

Lightning, and the laughter of the Gods. I did not cross it, I will not kill what I gave life to.

Whoever you are, go, go, let me grow downward to the grave quietly now.

ELECTRA I cannot

Go: I have no other refuge. Mother! Will you not kiss me, will you not take me into the house,

Your child once, long a wanderer? Electra my name. I have begged my way from Phocis, my brother is dead there,

Who used to care for me.

CLYTEMNESTRA Who is dead, who?

ELECTRA

My brother

Orestes,
Killed in a court quarrel.

CLYTEMNESTRA (*weeping*) Oh, you lie! The widening blue
blue eyes,
The little voice of the child . . . Liar.

ELECTRA It is true. I have wept
long, on every mountain. You, mother,
Have only begun weeping. Far off, in a far country, no fit
burial . . .

CLYTEMNESTRA And do you bringing
Bitterness . . . or lies . . . look for a welcome? I have only
loved two:

The priest killed my daughter for a lamb on a stone and
now you say the boy too . . . dead, dead?
The world's full of it, a shoreless lake of lies and floating
rumors . . . pack up your wares, peddler,
Too false for a queen. Why, no, if I believed you . . . Beast,
treacherous beast, that shouting comes nearer,
What's in the City?

ELECTRA I am a stranger, I know nothing of the
city, I know only
My mother hates me, and Orestes my brother
Died pitifully, far off.

CLYTEMNESTRA Too many things, too many things call
me, what shall I do? Electra,
Electra help me. This comes of living softly, I had a lion's
strength
Once.

ELECTRA Me for help? I am utterly helpless, I had help in
my brother and he is dead in Phocis.
Give me refuge: but each of us two must weep for herself,
one sorrow. An end of the world were on us

What would it matter to us weeping? Do you remember him,

Mother, mother?

CLYTEMNESTRA I have dared too much: never dare any thing, Electra, the ache is afterward,

At the hour it hurts nothing. Prophets, you lied.

You said he would come with vengeance on me: but now he is dead, this girl says: and because he was lovely, blue-eyed,

And born in a most unhappy house I will believe it. But the world's fogged with the breath of liars,

And if she has laid a net for me . . .

I'll call up the old lioness lives yet in my body, I have dared, I have dared, and tooth and talon

Carve a way through. Lie to me?

ELECTRA Have I endured for months, with feet bleeding, among the mountains,

Between the great gulfs alone and starving, to bring you a lie now? I know the worst of you, I looked for the worst, Mother, mother, and have expected nothing but to die of this home-coming: but Orestes

Has entered the cave before; he is gathered up in a lonely mountain quietness, he is guarded from angers

In the tough cloud that spears fall back from.

CLYTEMNESTRA Was he still beautiful? The brown mothers down in the city

Keep their brats about them; what it is to live high! Oh!

Tell them down there, tell them in Tiryns,

Tell them in Sparta,

That water drips through the Queen's fingers and trickles down her wrists, for the boy, for the boy,

Born of her body, whom she, fool, fool, fool,

Drove out of the world. Electra,

Make peace with me.

Oh, Oh, Oh!

I have labored violently all the days of my life for nothing
—nothing—worse than anything—this death

Was a thing I wished. See how they make fools of us.

Amusement for them, to watch us labor after the thing that
will tear us in pieces. . . . Well, strength's good.

I am the Queen; I will gather up my fragments

And not go mad now.

ELECTRA

Mother, what are the men

With spears gathering at the stair's foot? Not of Mycenæ
by their armor, have you mercenaries

Wanting pay? Do they serve . . . Ægisthus?

CLYTEMNESTRA

What men? I

seem not to know . . .

Who has laid a net for me, what fool

For me, me? Porter, by me.

Leucippe, my guards; into the house, rouse them. I am sorry
for him,

I am best in storm. You, Electra?

The death you'll die, my daughter. Guards, out! Was it a
lie? No matter, no matter, no matter,

Here's peace. Spears, out, out! They bungled the job mak-
ing me a woman. Here's youth come back to me,

And all the days of gladness.

LEUCIPPE (*running back from the door*) O, Queen, stran-
gers . . .

ORESTES (*a sword in his hand, with spearmen following,
comes from the door*) Where is that woman

The Gods utterly hate?

ELECTRA

Brother: let her not speak, kill
quickly. Is the other one safe now?

ORESTES

That dog

Fell under his chariot, we made sure of him between the wheels and the hooves, squealing. Now for this one.

CLYTEMNESTRA

Wait. I was weeping, Electra will tell you, my hands are wet still,

For your blue eyes that death had closed she said away up in Phocis. I die now, justly or not

Is out of the story, before I die I'll tell you—wait, child, wait. Did I quiver

Or pale at the blade? I say, caught in a net, netted in by my enemies, my husband murdered,

Myself to die, I am joyful knowing she lied, you live, the only creature

Under all the spread and arch of daylight

That I love, lives.

ELECTRA The great fangs drawn fear craftiness now, kill quickly.

CLYTEMNESTRA As for her, the wife of the shepherd Suckled her, but you

These very breasts nourished: rather one of your northern spearmen do what's needful; not you

Draw blood where you drew milk. The Gods endure much, but beware them.

ORESTES This, a God in his temple
Openly commanded.

CLYTEMNESTRA Ah, child, child, who has mistaught you and who has betrayed you? What voice had the God? How was it different from a man's and did you see him?

Who sent the priest presents? They fool us, And the Gods let them. No doubt also the envious King of

Phocis has lent you counsel as he lent you
Men: let one of them do it. Life's not jewel enough

That I should plead for it: this much I pray, for your sake,
 not with your hand, not with your hand, or the memory
 Will so mother you, so glue to you, so embracing you,
 Not the deep sea's green day, no cleft of a rock in the bed
 of the deep sea, no ocean of darkness
 Outside the stars, will hide nor wash you. What is it to me
 that I have rejoiced knowing you alive,
 O child, O precious to me, O alone loved, if now dying by
 my manner of death
 I make nightmare the heir, nightmare, horror, in all I have
 of you;
 And you haunted forever, never to sleep dreamless again,
 never to see the blue cloth
 But the red runs over it; fugitive of dreams, madman at
 length, the memory of a scream following you houndlike,
 Inherit Mycenæ? Child, for this has not been done before,
 there is no old fable, no whisper
 Out of the foundation, among the people that were before
 our people, no echo has ever
 Moved among these most ancient stones, the monsters here,
 nor stirred under any mountain, nor fluttered
 Under any sky, of a man slaying his mother. Sons have
 killed fathers—

ORESTES

And a woman her son's father—

CLYTEMNESTRA

O many times: and these old stones have seen horrors: a
 house of madness and blood
 I married into: and worse was done on this rock among the
 older people before: but not this,
 Not the son his mother; this the silent ones,
The old hard ones, the great bearers of burden have not seen
yet.
 Nor shall, to-day nor yet to-morrow, nor ever in the world.

CASSANDRA

That love

The King had tasted; that was her love.

ELECTRA

And mourning for

our father on the mountain we judged her;

And the God condemned her, what more, what more?

Strike.

ORESTES If they'd give me time, the pack there—how can I think,

And all the whelps of Mycenæ yelling at the stair-foot?

Decision: a thing to be decided:

The arm's lame, dip in, dip in? Shut your mouths, rabble.

CLYTEMNESTRA There is one thing no man can do.

ORESTES

What, enter

his fountain?

ELECTRA

O coward!

ORESTES I will be passive, I'm blunted. She's not this fellow's mother.

ELECTRA

O spearman, spearman, do it!

One stroke: it is just.

THE SPEARMAN

As, for me, my lord...

CLYTEMNESTRA (*calling loudly*)

Help, help, men

of Mycenæ, to your Queen. Break them.

Rush the stair, there are only ten hold it. Up, up, kill.

ORESTES I will kill.

CLYTEMNESTRA (*falling on her knees*) Child,

Spare me, let me live! Child! Ail...

ELECTRA

You have done well.

ORESTES I have done... I have done...

Who ever saw such a flow... was I made out of this, I'm not red, am I?

See, father?

It was someone else did it but I told him to. Drink, drink,
dog. Drink dog.

He reaches up a tongue between the stones, lapping it. So
thirsty old dog, uh?

Rich and sticky.

CLYTEMNESTRA (*raising herself a little*) Sleep...for me
...yes.

Not you...any more...Orestes...I shall be there.
you will beg death...vainly as I have begged...life.

Ah...beast that I unkennelled! (*She dies.*)

ORESTES (*crouching by her*) Ooh...ooh...

ELECTRA

The face is lean and terrible. Orestes!

They are fighting on the stair. Man yourself. Come. Pick
up the sword.

Let her be, two of ours are down, they yield on the stair.

Stand up, speak or fight, speak to the people

Or we go where she is.

ORESTES There's a red and sticky sky that you
can touch here.

And though it's unpleasant we are at peace. |

ELECTRA (*catching up the sword*) Agamemnon failed
here. Not in me. Hear, Mycenæans.

I am Agamemnon's daughter, we have avenged him, the
crime's paid utterly.

You have not forgotten the great King—what, in eight
years? I am Electra, I am his daughter.

My brother is Orestes. My brother is your king and has
killed his murderers. The dog Ægisthus is dead,

And the Queen is dead: the city is at peace.

ORESTES (*standing up*) Must I dip my wand
into my fountain, give it to me.

The male plaything. (*He catches ELECTRA's arm, snatching at the sword.*)

ELECTRA For what? Be quiet, they have heard me.

ORESTES You said I must do it, I will do it.

ELECTRA It is done!

Brother, brother? (*ORESTES takes the sword from her by force.*) O Mycenæ

With this sword he did justice, he let it fall, he has retaken it,

He is your King.

ORESTES Whom must I pierce, the girl that plotted with me in the mountain? There was someone to kill . . . Sweet Electra?

ELECTRA It is done, it is finished!

CASSANDRA The nearest, the most loved, her, truly. Strike!—Electra, My father has wanted vengeance longer.

THE PEOPLE BELOW Orestes, Orestes!

ELECTRA (*pointing to CASSANDRA*) Her —your mother—she killed him.

ORESTES (*turning and striking*) How tall you have grown, mother.

CASSANDRA (*falling*) I . . . waited long for it . . .

ORESTES

I have killed my mother and my mother—two mothers—see, there they lie—I have gone home twice. You put it in And the flesh yields to it . . . (*He goes down the stair.*)

Now, to find her again
All through the forest . . .

ELECTRA Let him pass, Mycenæans. Avoid his sword. Let him pass, pass. The madness of the house Perches on him.

A LEADER OF THE MYCENÆANS Daughter of Agamemnon,

You with constancy and force
In the issueless thing have found an issue. Now it is for us
the kingless city
To find a ruler. Rest in the house. As for the young man,
Though he has done justice, and no hand in Mycenæ is
raised against him, for him there is no issue.
We let him go on; and if he does not slay himself with the
red sword he will die in the mountain.
With us be peace. Rest in the house, daughter of Agamem-
non. The old madness, with your brother,
Go out of our gates.

ELECTRA A house to rest in! . . . Gather up the
dead: I will go in; I have learned strength.

III

They carried the dead down the great stair; the slaves with
pails of water and sand scoured the dark stains.
The people meeting in another place to settle the troubled
city the stair was left vacant,
The porch untrampled, and about twilight one of the great
stones: The world is younger than we are,
Yet now drawing to an end, now that the seasons falter.
Then another, that had been spared the blood-bath:
What way do they falter?—There fell warm rain, the first
answered, in the midst of summer. A little afterward
Cold rain came down; and sand was rubbed over me as
when the winds blow. This in the midst of summer.
—I did not feel it, said the second sleepily. And a third:
The noisy and very mobile creatures
Will be quieted long before the world's end.—What crea-
tures?—The active ones, that have two ends let down
ward,
A mongrel race, mixed of soft stone with fugitive water

The night deepened, the dull old stones
Droned at each other, the summer stars wheeled over above
them. Before dawn the son of Agamemnon
Came to the stair-foot in the darkness.

ORESTES

O stones of the house:

I entreat hardness: I did not live with you
Long enough in my youth: . . . I will go up to where I killed
her. . . . We must face things down, mother,
Or they'd devour us. . . . Nobody? . . . Even the stones have
been scrubbed. A keen housekeeper, sweet Electra.
. . . It would be childish to forget it; the woman has cer-
tainly been killed, and I think it was I
Her son did it. Something not done before in the world.
Here is the penalty:

You gather up all your forces to the act, and afterward
Silence, no voice, no ghost, vacancy, but all's not expended.

Those powers want bitter action. No object.

Deeds are too easy. Our victims are too fragile, they ought
to have thousands of lives, you strike out once only
The sky breaks like a bubble. . . . No, wife of Ægisthus,—
Why should I mask it?—mother, my mother,

The one soft fiber that went mad yesterday's
~~Burnt out of me now, there is nothing you could touch if~~
you should come; but you have no power, you dead
~~Are a weak people:~~ This is the very spot: I was here, she
here: and I walk over it not trembling,
Over the scrubbed stones to the door. (*He knocks with the*
sword-hilt.) They sleep well. But my sister having all her
desire

Better than any. (*He knocks again.*)

THE PORTER (*through the door*) Who is there?

ORESTES The owner of the house. Orestes.

THE PORTER Go away, drunkard.

ORESTES Shall I tell my servants to break in the door and whip the porter?

THE PORTER Oh, Oh! You men from Phocis, stand by me while I speak to the door. (*Having opened the door, holding a torch.*) Is it you truly, my lord? We thought, we thought... we pray you to enter the house, my lord Orestes.

ORESTES You are to waken my sister.

I'll speak with her here.

ELECTRA (*at the door*) Oh! You are safe, you are well! Did you ever think I could be sleeping? But it is true, I have slept soundly. Come, come.

ORESTES A fellow in the forest
Told me you'd had the stone scrubbed... I mean, that you'd entered the house, received as Agamemnon's daughter

In the honor of the city. So I free to go traveling have come with—what's the word, Electra?—farewell.

Have come to bid you farewell.

ELECTRA It means—you are going somewhere? Come into the house, Orestes, tell me...

ORESTES
The cape's rounded. I have not shipwrecked.

ELECTRA Around the
rock we have passed safely is the hall of this house,
The throne in the hall, the shining lordship of Mycenæ.

ORESTES No:
the open world, the sea and its wonders.
You thought the oars raked the headland in the great storm—what, for Mycenæ?

ELECTRA Not meanest of the Greek cities:
Whose king captained the world into Asia. Have you suddenly become... a God, brother, to over-vault

Agamemnon's royalty? O come in, come in. I am cold, cold.
I pray you.

ORESTES Fetch a cloak, porter.

If I have outgrown the city a little—I have earned it. Did
you notice, Electra, she caught at the sword
As the point entered: the palm of her right hand was slashed
to the bone before the mercy of the point
Slept in her breast: the laid-open palm it was that under-
mined me . . . Oh, the cloak. It's a blond night,
We'll walk on the stones: no chill, the stars are mellow. If
I dare remember
Yesterday . . . because I have conquered, the soft fiber's
burnt out.

ELECTRA You have conquered: possess: enter the house,
Take up the royalty.

ORESTES You were in my vision to-night in the
forest, Electra, I thought I embraced you
More than brotherwise . . . possessed, you call it . . . entered
the fountain—

ELECTRA Oh, hush. *Therefore* you would not
kill her!

ORESTES

I killed. It is foolish to darken things with words. I was
here, she there, screaming. Who if not I?

ELECTRA

The hidden reason: the bitter kernel of your mind that has
made you mad: I that learned strength
Yesterday, I have no fear.

ORESTES Fear? The city is friendly and
took you home with honor, they'll pay
Phocis his wage, you will be quiet.

ELECTRA Are you resolved to under-
stand nothing, Orestes?

I am not Agamemnon, only his daughter. You are Agamemnon. Beggars and the sons of beggars
May wander at will over the world, but Agamemnon has
his honor and high Mycenæ
Is not to be cast.

ORESTES Mycenæ for a ship: who will buy kingdom
And sell me a ship with oars?

ELECTRA Dear: listen. Come to the
parapet where it hangs over the night:
The ears at the door hinder me. Now, let the arrow-eyed
stars hear, the night, not men, as for the Gods
No one can know them, whether they be angry or pleased,
tall and terrible, standing apart,
When they make signs out of the darkness.... I cannot tell
you.... You will stay here, brother?

ORESTES I'll go
To the edge and over it. Sweet sister, if you've got a mes-
sage for them, the dark ones?

ELECTRA You do not mean
Death; but a wandering; what does it matter what you
mean? I know two ways and one will quiet you.
You shall choose either.

ORESTES But I am quiet. It is more regular than
a sleeping child's: be untroubled,
Yours burns, it is you trembling.

ELECTRA Should I not tremble? It is
only a little to offer,
But all that I have.

ORESTES Offer?

ELECTRA It is accomplished: my father is
avenged: the fates and the body of Electra
Are nothing. But for Agamemnon to rule in Mycenæ: that
is not nothing. O my brother

And chaste, to name both choices. The first is easy. That
terrible dream in the forest: if fear of desire
Drives you away: it is easy for me not to be. I never have
known

Sweetness in life: all my young days were given—

ORESTES

I thought

to be silent was better,

And understand you: afterwards I'll speak.

ELECTRA

—to the noise of

blood crying for blood, a crime to be punished,

A house to be emptied: these things are done: and now I am
lonely, and what becomes of me is not important.

There's water, and there are points and edges, pain's only a
moment: I'd do it and not speak, but nobody knows

Whether it would give you peace or madden you again, I'd
not be leagued with that bad woman against you,

And these great walls sit by the crater, terrible desires blow
through them. O brother, I'll never blame you,

I share the motherhood and the fatherhood, I can conceive
the madness, if you desire too near

The fountain: tell me: I also love *you*: not that way, but
enough to suffer. What needs to be done

To make peace for you, tell me. I shall so gladly die to
make it for you: or so gladly yield you

What you know is maiden. You are the King; have all your
will: only remain in steep Mycenæ,

In the honor of our father. Not yet: do not speak yet. You
have said it is not

Remorse drives you away: monsters require monsters, to
have let her live a moment longer

Would have been the crime: therefore it cannot be but
desire drives you: or the fear of desire: dearest,

Deflower, trample, break down, pillage the little city,
Make what breach you will, with flesh or a spear, give it to
the spoiler. See, as I tear the garment.

What if I called it cheating? Be cruel and treacherous: I'll
run my chances

On the bitter mercies of to-morrow.

ORESTES

Bitter they would be. No.

ELECTRA

It's clear

that for this reason

You'd sneak out of Mycenæ and be lost outward. Taste first,
bite the apple, once dared and tried — —

Desire will be not terrible. It's doglike to run off whining.

Remember it was I that urged

Yesterday's triumph. You: life was enough: let them live.

I drove on, burning; your mind, reluctant metal,

I dipped it in fire and forged it sharp, day after day I beat
and burned against you, and forged

A sword: I the arm. Are you sorry it's done? Now again
with hammer and burning heat I beat against you,

You will not be sorry. We two of all the world, we alone,

Are fit for each other, we have so wrought... O eyes
scorning the world, storm-feathered hawk my hands

Caught out of the air and made you a king over this rock, O
axe with the gold helve, O star

Alone over the storm, beacon to men over blown seas, you
will not flee fate, you will take

What the Gods give. What is a man not ruling? An ant in
the hill: ruler or slave the choice is,

—Or a runaway slave, your pilgrim portion, buffeted over
the borders of the lands, publicly

Whipped in the cities. But you, you will bind the north-star
on your forehead, you will stand up in Mycenæ

Stone, and a king.

ORESTES I am stone enough not to be changed by
words, nor by the sweet and burning flame of you,
Beautiful Electra.

ELECTRA Well then: we've wasted our night. See,
there's the morning star
I might have dragged into a metaphor of you. A fool: a
boy: no king.

ORESTES It would have been better
To have parted kindlier, for it is likely
We shall have no future meeting.

ELECTRA You will let this crime (the
God commanded) that dirtied the old stones here
Make division forever?

ORESTES Not the crime, the wakening. That
deed is past, it is finished, things past
Make no division afterward, they have no power, they have
become nothing at all: this much
I have learned at a crime's knees.

ELECTRA Yet we are divided.

ORESTES Because I have
Suddenly awakened, I will not waste inward
Upon humanity, having found a fairer object.

ELECTRA Some nymph of
the field? I knew this coldness
Had a sick root: a girl in the north told me about the hill-
shepherds who living in solitude
Turn beast with the ewes, their oreads baa to them through
the matted fleece and they run mad, what madness
Met you in the night and sticks to you?

ORESTES I left the madness of
the house, to-night in the dark, with you it walks yet.
How shall I tell you what I have learned? Your mind is
like a hawk's or like a lion's, this knowledge

Is out of the order of your mind, a stranger language. To
wild beasts and the blood of kings
A verse blind in the book.

ELECTRA At least my eyes can see dawn gray-
ing: tell and not mock me, our moment
Dies in a moment.

ORESTES Here is the last labor
To spend on humanity. I saw a vision of us move in the
dark: all that we did or dreamed of
Regarded each other, the man pursued the woman, the
woman clung to the man, warriors and kings
Strained at each other in the darkness, all loved or fought
inward, each one of the lost people
Sought the eyes of another that another should praise him;
sought never his own but another's; the net of desire
Had every nerve drawn to the center, so that they writhed
like a full draught of fishes, all matted
In the one mesh; when they look backward they see only a
man standing at the beginning,
Or forward, a man at the end; or if upward, men in the
shining bitter sky striding and feasting,
Whom you call Gods...

It is all turned inward, all your desires incestuous, the
woman the serpent, the man the rose-red cavern,
Both human, worship forever...

ELECTRA You have dreamed wretchedly.

ORESTES I have
seen the dreams of the people and not dreamed them.
As for me, I have slain my mother.

ELECTRA No more?

ORESTES And the gate's
open, the gray boils over the mountain, I have greater

Kindred than dwell under a roof. Didn't I say this would
be dark to you? I have cut the meshes
And fly like a freed falcon. To-night, lying on the hillside,
sick with those visions, I remembered
The knife in the stalk of my humanity; I drew and it broke;
I entered the life of the brown forest
And the great life of the ancient peaks, the patience of stone,
I felt the changes in the veins
In the throat of the mountain, a grain in many centuries, we
have our own time, not yours; and I was the stream
Draining the mountain wood; and I the stag drinking; and
I was the stars,
Boiling with light, wandering alone, each one the lord of
his own summit; and I was the darkness
Outside the stars, I included them, they were a part of me.
I was mankind also, a moving lichen
On the cheek of the round stone . . . they have not made
words for it, to go behind things, beyond hours and ages,
And be all things in all time, in their returns and passages,
in the motionless and timeless center,
In the white of the fire . . . how can I express the excellence
I have found, that has no color but clearness;
No honey but ecstasy; nothing wrought nor remembered;
no undertone nor silver second murmur
That rings in love's voice, I and my loved are one; no desire
but fulfilled; no passion but peace,
The pure flame and the white, fierier than any passion; no
time but spherul eternity: Electra,
Was that your name before this life dawned—

ELECTRA

Here is mere
death. Death like a triumph I'd have paid to keep you
A king in high Mycenæ: but here is shameful death, to die
because I have lost you. They'll say

*Having done justice Agamemnon's son ran mad and was
lost in the mountain; but Agamemnon's daughter
Hanged herself from a beam of the house: O bountiful
hands of justice! This horror draws upon me
Like stone walking.*

ORESTES What fills men's mouths is nothing; and
your threat is nothing; I have fallen in love outward.
If I believed you—it is I that am like stone walking.

ELECTRA I can endure
even to hate you,

But that's no matter. Strength's good. You are lost. I here
remember the honor of the house, and Agamemnon's.

She turned and entered the ancient house. Orestes walked in
the clear dawn; men say that a serpent
Killed him in high Arcadia. But young or old, few years or
many, signified less than nothing
To him who had climbed the tower beyond time, con-
sciously, and cast humanity, entered the earlier fountain.

NIGHT

The ebb slips from the rock, the sunken
Tide-rocks lift streaming shoulders
Out of the slack, the slow west
Sombering its torch; a ship's light
Shows faintly, far out,
Over the weight of the prone ocean
On the low cloud.

Over the dark mountain, over the dark pinewood,
Down the long dark valley along the shrunken river,
Returns the splendor without rays, the shining of shadow,
Peace-bringer, the matrix of all shining and quieter of
shining.
Where the shore widens on the bay she opens dark wings
And the ocean accepts her glory. O soul worshipful of her
You like the ocean have grave depths where she dwells
always,
And the film of waves above that takes the sun takes also
Her, with more love. The sun-lovers have a blond favorite,
A father of lights and noises, wars, weeping and laughter,
Hot labor, lust and delight and the other blemishes.
Quietness
Flows from her deeper fountain; and he will die; and she is
immortal.

Far off from here the slender
Flocks of the mountain forest

Move among stems like towers
Of the old redwoods to the stream,
No twig crackling; dip shy
Wild muzzles into the mountain water
Among the dark ferns.

O passionately at peace you being secure will pardon
The blasphemies of glowworms, the lamp in my tower, the
fretfulness
Of cities, the crescents of the planets, the pride of the stars.
This August night in a rift of cloud Antares reddens,
'The great one, the ancient torch, a lord among lost children,
The earth's orbit doubled would not girdle his greatness,
one fire
Globed, out of grasp of the mind enormous; but to you
O Night
What? Not a spark? What flicker of a spark in the faint
far glimmer
Of a lost fire dying in the desert, dim coals of a sand-pit the
Bedouins
Wandered from at dawn... Ah singing prayer to what
gulfs tempted
Suddenly are you more lost? To us the near-hand mountain
Be a measure of height, the tide-worn cliff at the sea-gate a
measure of continuance.

The tide, moving the night's
Vastness with lonely voices,
Turns, the deep dark-shining
Pacific leans on the land
Feeling his cold strength
To the outmost margins: you Night will resume
The stars in your time.

O passionately at peace when will that tide draw shore-ward?

Truly the spouting fountains of light, Antares, Arcturus,
Tire of their flow, they sing one song but they think silence.
The striding winter giant Orion shines, and dreams
darkness.

And life, the flicker of men and moths and the wolf on the
hill,

Though furious for continuance, passionately feeding,
passionately

Remaking itself upon its mates, remembers deep inward
The calm mother, the quietness of the womb and the egg,
The primal and the latter silences: dear Night it is memory
Prophecies, prophecy that remembers, the charm of the dark.
And I and my people, we are willing to love the four-score
years

Heartily; but as a sailor loves the sea, when the helm is for
harbor.

Have men's minds changed,
Or the rock hidden in the deep of the waters of the soul
Broken the surface? A few centuries
Gone by, was none dared not to people
The darkness beyond the stars with harps and habitations.
But now, dear is the truth. Life is grown sweeter and
lonelier,
And death is no evil.

BIRDS

The fierce musical cries of a couple of sparrowhawks hunting on the headland,
Hovering and darting, their heads northwestward,
Prick like silver arrows shot through a curtain the noise of the ocean
Trampling its granite; their red backs gleam
Under my window around the stone corners; nothing gracefuller, nothing
Nimble in the wind. Westward the wave-gleaners,
The old gray sea-going gulls are gathered together, the northwest wind wakening
Their wings to the wild spirals of the wind-dance.
Fresh as the air, salt as the foam, play birds in the bright wind, fly falcons
Forgetting the oak and the pinewood, come gulls
From the Carmel sands and the sands at the river-mouth, from Lobos and out of the limitless
Power of the mass of the sea, for a poem
Needs multitude, multitudes of thoughts, all fierce, all flesh-eaters, musically clamorous
Bright hawks that hover and dart headlong, and ungainly
Gray hungers fledged with desire of transgression, salt slimed beaks, from the sharp
Rock-shores of the world and the secret waters.

FOG

Invisible gulls with human voices cry in the sea-cloud
"There is room, wild minds,
Up high in the cloud; the web and the feather remember
Three elements, but here
Is but one, and the webs and the feathers
Subduing but the one
Are the greater, with strength and to spare." You dream,
 wild criers,
The peace that all life
Dreams gluttonously, the infinite self that has eaten
Environment, and lives
Alone, unencroached on, perfectly gorged, one God.
Cæsar and Napoleon
Visibly acting their dream of that solitude, Christ and
 Gautama,
Being God, devouring
The world with atonement for God's sake...ah sacred
 hungers,
The conqueror's, the prophet's,
The lover's, the hunger of the sea-beaks, slaves of the last
 peace,
Worshippers of oneness.

BOATS IN A FOG

Sports and gallantries, the stage, the arts, the antics of
dancers,

The exuberant voices of music,

Have charm for children but lack nobility; it is bitter
earnestness

That makes beauty; the mind

Knows, grown adult.

A sudden fog-drift muffled the ocean,
A throbbing of engines moved in it,
At length, a stone's throw out, between the rocks and the
vapor,

One by one moved shadows

Out of the mystery, shadows, fishing-boats, trailing each
other,

Following the cliff for guidance,

Holding a difficult path between the peril of the sea-fog

And the foam on the shore granite.

One by one, trailing their leader, six crept by me,

Out of the vapor and into it,

The throb of their engines subdued by the fog, patient and
cautious,

Coasting all around the peninsula

Back to the buoys in Monterey harbor. A flight of pelicans

Is nothing lovelier to look at;

The flight of the planets is nothing nobler; all the arts lose
virtue
Against the essential reality
Of creatures going about their business among the equally
Earnest elements of nature.

GRANITE AND CYPRESS

White-maned, wide-throated, the heavy-shouldered children
of the wind leap at the sea-cliff.

The invisible falcon

Brooded on water and bred them in wide waste places, in a
bride-chamber wide to the stars' eyes

In the center of the ocean,

Where no prow passes nor island is lifted . . . the sea beyond
Lobos is whitened with the falcon's

Passage, he is here now,

The sky is one cloud, his wing-feathers hiss in the white
grass, my sapling cypresses writhing

In the fury of his passage

Dare not dream of their centuries of future endurance of
tempest. (I have granite and cypress,

Both long-lasting,

Planted in the earth; but the granite sea-boulders are prey
to no hawk's wing, they have taken worse pounding,

Like me they remember

Old wars and are quiet; for we think that the future is one
piece with the past, we wonder why tree-tops

And people are so shaken.)

VICES

Spirited people make a thousand jewels in verse and prose
and the restlessness of talent

Runs over and floods the stage or spreads its fever on canvas.
They are skilled in music too, the demon is never satisfied,
they take to puppets, they invent

New arts, they take to drugs...and we all applaud our
vices.

Mine, coldness and the tenor of a stone tranquillity; slow
life, the growth of trees and verse,

Content the unagitable and somewhat earthfast nature.

PHENOMENA

Great-enough both accepts and subdues; the great frame
takes all creatures;
From the greatness of their element they all take beauty.
Gulls; and the dingy freightship lurching south in the eye
of a rain-wind;
The air-plane dipping over the hill; hawks hovering
The white grass of the headland; cormorants roosting upon
the guano-
Whitened skerries; pelicans awind; sea-slime
Shining at night in the wave-stir like drowned men's lanterns;
smugglers signaling
A cargo to land; or the old Point Pinos lighthouse
Lawfully winking over dark water; the flight of the twilight
herons,
Lonely wings and a cry; or with motor-vibrations
That hum in the rock like a new storm-tone of the ocean's
to turn eyes westward
The navy's new-bought Zeppelin going by in the twilight,
Far out seaward; relative only to the evening star and the
ocean
It slides into a cloud over Point Lobos.

PEOPLE AND A HERON

A desert of weed and water-darkened stone under my
western windows
The ebb lasted all afternoon,
And many pieces of humanity, men, women, and children,
gathering shellfish,
Swarmed with voices of gulls the sea-beach.
At twilight they went off together, the verge was left vacant,
an evening heron
Bent broad wings over the black ebb,
And left me wondering why a lone bird was dearer to me
than many people.
Well: rare is dear: but also I suppose
Well reconciled with the world but not with our own na-
tures we grudge to see them
Reflected on the world for a mirror.

HAUNTED COUNTRY

Here the human past is dim and feeble and alien to us
Our ghosts draw from the crowded future.
Fixed as the past how could it fail to drop weird shadows
And make strange murmurs about twilight?
In the dawn twilight metal falcons flew over the mountain,
Multitudes, and faded in the air; at moonrise
The farmer's girl by the still river is afraid of phantoms,
Hearing the pulse of a great city
Move on the water-meadow and stream off south; the
country's
Children for all their innocent minds
Hide dry and bitter lights in the eye, they dream without
knowing it
The inhuman years to be accomplished,
The inhuman powers, the servile cunning under pressure,
In a land grown old, heavy and crowded.
There are happy places that fate skips; here is not one of
them;
The tides of the brute womb, the excess
And weight of life spilled out like water, the last migration
Gathering against this holier valley-mouth
That knows its fate beforehand, the flow of the womb,
banked back
By the older flood of the ocean, to swallow it.

AUTUMN EVENING

Though the little clouds ran southward still, the quiet
autumnal

Cool of the late September evening

Seemed promising rain, rain, the change of the year, the
angel

Of the sad forest. A heron flew over

With that remote ridiculous cry, "Quawk," the cry

That seems to make silence more silent. A dozen

Flops of the wing, a drooping glide, at the end of the glide

The cry, and a dozen flops of the wing.

I watched him pass on the autumn-colored sky; beyond him
Jupiter shone for evening star.

The sea's voice worked into my mood, I thought "No matter
What happens to men . . . the world's well made though."

SHINE, PERISHING REPUBLIC

While this America settles in the mould of its vulgarity,
heavily thickening to empire,
And protest, only a bubble in the molten mass, pops and
sighs out, and the mass hardens,

I sadly smiling remember that the flower fades to make
fruit, the fruit rots to make earth.
Out of the mother; and through the spring exultances, ripe-
ness and decadence; and home to the mother.

You making haste haste on decay: not blameworthy;
life is good, be it stubbornly long or suddenly
A mortal splendor: meteors are not needed less than moun-
tains: shine, perishing republic.

But for my children, I would have them keep their distance
from the thickening center; corruption
Never has been compulsory, when the cities lie at the
monster's feet there are left the mountains.

And boys, be in nothing so moderate as in love of man, a
clever servant, insufferable master.
There is the trap that catches noblest spirits, that caught—
they say—God, when he walketh on earth.

THE TREASURE

Mountains, a moment's earth-waves rising and hollowing;
the earth too's an ephemerid; the stars——
Short-lived as grass the stars quicken in the nebula and dry
in their summer, they spiral
Blind up space, scattered black seeds of a future; nothing
lives long, the whole sky's
Recurrences tick the seconds of the hours of the ages of the
gulf before birth, and the gulf
After death is like dated: to labor eighty years in a notch of
eternity is nothing too tiresome,
Enormous repose after, enormous repose before, the flash of
activity.
Surely you never have dreamed the incredible depths were
prologue and epilogue merely
To the surface play in the sun, the instant of life, what is
called life? I fancy
That silence is the thing, this noise a found word for it;
interjection, a jump of the breath at that silence;
Stars burn, grass grows, men breathe: as a man finding
treasure says "Ah!" but the treasure's the essence;
Before the man spoke it was there, and after he has spoken
he gathers it, inexhaustible treasure.

JOY

Though joy is better than sorrow, joy is not great;
Peace is great, strength is great.
Not for joy the stars burn, not for joy the vulture
Spreads her gray sails on the air
Over the mountain; not for joy the worn mountain
Stands, while years like water
Trench his long sides. "I am neither mountain nor bird
Nor star; and I seek joy."
The weakness of your breed: yet at length quietness
Will cover those wistful eyes.

PRACTICAL PEOPLE

Practical people, I have been told,
Weary of the sea for his waves go up and down
Endlessly to no visible purpose;
Tire of the tides, for the tides are tireless, the tides
Are well content with their own march-tune
And nothing accomplished is no matter to them.
It seems wasteful to practical people.
And that the nations labor and gather and dissolve
Into destruction; the stars sharpen
Their spirit of splendor, and then it dims, and the stars
Darken; and that the spirit of man
Sharpens up to maturity and cools dull
With age, dies, and rusts out of service;
And all these tidal gatherings, growth and decay,
Shining and darkening, are forever
Renewed; and the whole cycle impenitently
Revolves, and all the past is future:—
Make it a difficult world . . . for practical people.

WOODROW WILSON

(February, 1924.)

It said "Come home, here is an end, a goal,
Not the one raced for, is it not better indeed? Victory you
know requires
Force to sustain victory, the burden is never lightened, but
final defeat
Buys peace: you have praised peace, peace without victory."

He said "It seems I am traveling no new way,
But leaving my great work unfinished how can I rest? I
enjoyed a vision,
Endured betrayal, you must not ask me to endure final
defeat,
Visionless men, blind hearts, blind mouths, live still."

It said "Yet perhaps your vision was less great
Than some you scorned, it has not proved even so practi-
cable; Lenin
Enters this pass with less reluctance. As to betrayals: there
are so many
Betrayals, the Russians and the Germans know."

He said "I knew I have enemies, I had not thought
To meet one at this brink: shall not the mocking voices die
in the grave?"

It said "They shall. Soon there is silence." "I dreamed this
end," he said, "when the prow
Of the long ship leaned against dawn, my people

Applauded me, and the world watched me. Again
I dreamed it at Versailles, the time I sent for the ship, and
the obstinate foreheads
That shared with me the settlement of the world flinched
at my threat and yielded.
That is all gone. . . . Do I remember this darkness?"

It said "No man forgets it but a moment.
The darkness before the mother, the depth of the return."
"I thought," he answered,
"That I was drawn out of this depth to establish the earth
on peace. My labor
Dies with me, why was I drawn out of this depth?"

It said "Loyal to your highest, sensitive, brave,
Sanguine, some few ways wise, you and all men are drawn
out of this depth
Only to be these things you are, as flowers for color, falcons
for swiftness,
Mountains for mass and quiet. Each for its quality

Is drawn out of this depth. Your tragic quality
Required the huge delusion of some major purpose to
produce it.
What, that the God of the stars needed your help?" He said
"This is my last
Worst pain, the bitter enlightenment that buys peace."

SCIENCE

Man, introverted man, having crossed
In passage and but a little with the nature of things this
latter century
Has begot giants; but being taken up
Like a maniac with self-love and inward conflicts cannot
manage his hybrids.
Being used to deal with edgeless dreams,
Now he's bred knives on nature turns them also inward:
they have thirsty points though.
His mind forebodes his own destruction;
Actæon who saw the goddess naked among leaves and his
hounds tore him.
A little knowledge, a pebble from the shingle,
A drop from the oceans: who would have dreamed this
infinitely little too much?

THE TORCH-BEARERS' RACE

Here is the world's end. When our fathers forded the first
river in Asia we crossed the world's end;
And when the North Sea throbbed under their keels, the
world's end;
And when the Atlantic surge rolled English oak in the
sea-trough; always there was farther to go,
A new world piecing out the old one: but ours, our new
world?
Dark and enormous rolls the surf; down on the mystical
tide-line under the cliffs at moonset
Dead tribes move, remembering the scent of their hills, the
lost hunters
Our fathers hunted; they driven westward died the sun's
death, they dread the depth and hang at the land's hem,
And are unavenged; frail ghosts, and ghostlike in their lives
too,
Having only a simple hunger for all our complication of
desires. Dark and enormous
Rolls the surf of the far storms of the heart of the ocean;
The old granite breaks into white torches the heavy-should-
ered children of the wind . . . our ancient wanderings
West from the world's birth what sea-bound breaking shall
flame up torchlike?
I am building a thick stone pillar upon this shore, the very
turn of the world, the long migration's
End; the sun goes on but we have come up to an end.

We have climbed at length to a height, to an end, this end:
shall we go down again to Mother Asia?
Some of us will go down, some will abide, but we sought
More than to return to a mother. This huge, inhuman,
remote, unruled, this ocean will show us
The inhuman road, the unruled attempt, the remote lode-
star.

The torch-bearers' race: it is run in a dusk; when the
emptied racer drops unseen at the end of his course
A fresh hand snatches the hilt of the light, the torch flies
onward

Though the man die. Not a runner knows where the light
was lighted, not a runner knows where it carries fire to,
Hand kisses hand in the dark, the torch passes, the man
Falls, and the torch passes. It gleamed across Euphrates
mud, shone on Nile shore, it lightened

The little homely Ionian water and the sweet Ægean.
O perfect breathing of the runners, those narrow courses,
names like the stars' names, Sappho, Alcæus,
And Æschylus a name like the first eagle's; but the torch
westering

The seas widened, the earth's bloom hardened, the stone
rose Rome seeding the earth, but the torch northering
Lightened the Atlantic . . . O flame, O beauty and shower
of beauty,

There is yet one ocean and then no more, God whom you
shine to walk there naked, on the final Pacific,
Not in a man's form.

The torch answered: Have I kindled a
morning?
For again, this old world's end is the gate of a world fire
new, of your wild future, wild as a hawk's dream,

Ways hung on nothing, like stars, feet shaking earth off;
that long way
Was a labor in a dream, will you wake now? The eaglets
rustle in the aerie, the red eyes of dawn stabbing up
through the nest-side,
You have walked in a dream, consumed with your fathers
and your mothers, you have loved
Inside the four walls of humanity, passions turned inward,
incestuous desires and a fighting against ghosts, but the
clarions
Of light have called morning.

What, not to be tangled any more in
the blinding
Rays of reflected desire, the man with the woman, the
woman with the child, the daughter with the father, but
freed
Of the web self-woven, the burning and the blistering
strands running inward?
Those rays to be lightened aside, to shine up the star-path,
subduing the world outward? Oh chicks in the high nest
be fledged now,
Having found out flight in the air to make wing to the
height, fierce eye-flames
Of the eaglets be strengthened, to drink of the fountain of
the beauty of the sun of the stars, and to gaze in his face,
not a father's,
And motherless and terrible and here.

But I at the gate, I
falling
On the gate-sill add this: When the ancient wisdom is
folded like a wine-stained cloth and laid up in darkness.
And the old symbols forgotten, in the glory of that your
hawk's dream

Remember that the life of mankind is like the life of a man,
a flutter from darkness to darkness
Across the bright hair of a fire, so much of the ancient
Knowledge will not be annulled. What unimaginable oppo-
nent to end you?

There is one fountain
Of power, yours and that last opponent's, and of long peace.

TAMAR

I

A night the half-moon was like a dancing-girl,
No, like a drunkard's last half-dollar
Shoved on the polished bar of the eastern hill-range,
Young Cauldwell rode his pony along the sea-cliff;
When she stopped, spurred; when she trembled, drove
The teeth of the little jagged wheels so deep
They tasted blood; the mare with four slim hooves
On a foot of ground pivoted like a top,
Jumped from the crumble of sod, went down, caught,
slipped;
Then, the quick frenzy finished, stiffening herself
Slid with her drunken rider down the ledges,
Shot from sheer rock and broke
Her life out on the rounded tidal boulders.

The night you know accepted with no show of emotion the
little accident; grave Orion
Moved northwest from the naked shore, the moon moved to
meridian, the slow pulse of the ocean
Beat, the slow tide came in across the slippery stones; it
drowned the dead mare's muzzle and sluggishly
Felt for the rider; Cauldwell's sleepy soul came back from
the blind course curious to know
What sea-cold fingers tapped the walls of its deserted ruin.
Pain, pain and faintness, crushing

Weights, and a vain desire to vomit, and soon again
The icy fingers, they had crept over the loose hand and lay
in the hair now. He rolled sidewise
Against mountains of weight and for another half-hour lay
still. With a gush of liquid noises
The wave covered him head and all, his body
Crawled without consciousness and like a creature with no
bones, a seaworm, lifted its face
Above the sea-wrack of a stone; then a white twilight grew
about the moon, and above
The ancient water, the everlasting repetition of the dawn.
You shipwrecked horseman
So many and still so many and now for you the last. But
when it grew daylight
He grew quite conscious; broken ends of bone ground on
each other among the working fibers
While by half-inches he was drawing himself out of the sea-
wrack up to sandy granite,
Out of the tide's path. Where the thin ledge tailed into flat
cliff he fell asleep. . . .

Far seaward

The daylight moon hung like a slip of cloud against the
horizon. The tide was ebbing
From the dead horse and the black belt of sea-growth.
Cauldwell seemed to have felt her crying beside him,
His mother, who was dead. He thought "If I had a month
or two of life yet
I would remember to be decent, only it's now too late, I'm
finished, mother, mother,
I'm sorry." After that he thought only of pain and raging
thirst until the sundown
Reddened the sea, and hands were reaching for him and
drawing him up the cliff.

His sister Tamar

Nursed him in the big westward bedroom
Of the old house on Point Lobos. After fever
A wonderful day of peace and pleasant weakness
Brought home to his heart the beauty of things. "O Tamar
I've thrown away years like rubbish. Listen, Tamar,
It would be better for me to be a cripple,
Sit on the steps and watch the forest grow up the hill
Or a new speck of moss on some old rock
That takes ten years agrowing, than waste
Shame and my spirit on Monterey rye whiskey,
And worse, and worse. I shan't be a cripple, Tamar.
We'll walk along the blessed old gray sea,
And up in the hills and watch the spring come home."

Youth is a troublesome but a magical thing,
There is little more to say for it when you've said
Young bones knit easily; he that fell in December
Walked in the February fields. His sister Tamar
Was with him, and his mind ran on her name,
But she was saying, "We laugh at poor Aunt Stella
With her spirit visitors: Lee, something told her truth.
Last August, you were hunting deer, you had been gone
Ten days or twelve, we heard her scream at night,
I went to the room, she told me
She'd seen you lying all bloody on the sea-beach
By a dead deer, its blood dabbling the black weeds of the
ebb."

"I was up Tassajara way," he answered,
"Far from the sea." "We were glad when you rode home
Safe, with the two bucks on the packhorse. But listen,
She said she watched the stars flying over you
In her vision, Orion she said, and made me look

Out of her window southward, where I saw
The stars they call the Scorpion, the red bead
With the curling tail. "Then it will be in winter,"
She whispered to me, "Orion is winter." "Tamar, Tamar,
Winter is over, visions are over and vanished,
The fields are winking full of poppies,
In a week or two I'll fill your arms with shining irises."

The winter sun went under and all that night there came a
roaring from the south; Lee Cauldwell
Lay awake and heard the tough old house creak all her
timbers; he was miserably lonely and vacant,
He'd put away the boyish jets of wickedness, loves with dark
eyes in Monterey back-streets, liquor
And all its fellowship, what was left to live for but the farm-
work, rain would come and hinder?
He heard the cypress trees that seemed to scream in the
wind, and felt the ocean pounding granite.
His father and Tamar's, the old man David Cauldwell, lay
in the eastern chamber; when the storm
Wakened him from the heartless fugitive slumber of age he
rose and made a light, and lighted
The lamp not cold yet; night and day were nearly equal to
him, he had seen too many; he dressed
Slowly and opened his Bible. In the neighboring rooms he
heard on one side Stella Moreland,
His dead wife's sister, quieting his own sister, the idiot Jinny
Cauldwell, who laughed and chuckled
Often for half the night long, an old woman with a child's
mind and mostly sleepless; in the other
Chamber Tamar was moaning, for it seemed that nightmare
Within the house answered to storm without.
To Tamar it seemed that she was walking by the seaside

With her dear brother, who said "Here's where I fell,
A bad girl that I knew in Monterey pushed me over the cliff,
You can see blood still on the boulders." Where he vanished to

She could not tell, nor why she was crying "Lee. No.
No dearest brother, dearest brother no." But she cried vainly,
Lee was not there to help her, a wild white horse
Came out of the wave and trampled her with his hooves,
The horror that she had dreaded through her dreaming
With mystical foreknowledge. When it wakened her,
She like her father heard old Jinny chuckling
And Stella sighing and soothing her, and the southwind
Raging around the gables of the house and through the
forest of the cypresses.

"When it rains it will be quieter," Tamar thought. She
slept again, all night not a drop fell.

Old Cauldwell from his window saw the cloudy light seep
up the sky from the overhanging
Hilltops, the dawn was dammed behind the hills but over-
flowed at last and ran down on the sea.

II

Lee Cauldwell rode across the roaring southwind to the
winter pasture up in the hills.

A hundred times he wanted Tamar, to show her some new
beauty of canyon wildflowers, water

Dashing its ferns, or oaktrees thrusting elbows at the wind,
black-oaks smoldering with foliage

And the streaked beauty of white-oak trunks, and redwood
glens; he rode up higher across the rainwind

And found his father's cattle in a quiet hollow among the
hills, their horns to the wind,

Quietly grazing. He returned another way, from the head-
land over Wildcat Canyon,
Saw the immense water possessing all the west and saw
Point Lobos
Gemmed in it, and the barn-roofs and the house-roof
Like ships' keels in the cypress tops, and thought of Tamar.
Toward sundown he approached the house; Will Andrews
Was leaving it and young Cauldwell said, "Listen, Bill An-
drews,
We've had gay times together and ridden at night.
I've quit it, I don't want my old friends to visit my sister.
Better keep off the place." "I will," said the other,
"When Tamar tells me to." "You think my bones
Aren't mended yet, better keep off." Lee Cauldwell
Rode by to the stable wondering why his lips
Twitched with such bitter anger; Tamar wondered
Why he went up-stairs without a word or smile
Of pleasure in her. The old man David Cauldwell,
When Lee had told him news of the herd and that Ramon
Seemed faithful, and the calves flourished, the old man an-
swered:
"I hear that there's a dance at Notley's Landing Saturday.
You'll be riding
Down the coast, Lee. Don't kill the horse, have a good
time." "No, I've had all I want, I'm staying
At home now, evenings." "Don't do it; better dance your
pony down the cliffs again than close
Young life into a little box; you've been too wild; now I'm
worn out, but I remember
Hell's in the box." Lee answered nothing, his father's lamp
of thought was hidden awhile in words,
An old man's words, like the dry evening moths that choke a
candle. A space, and he was saying,

"Come summer we'll be mixed into the bloody squabble out there, and you'll be going headforemost
Unless you make your life so pleasant you'd rather live it.
I mayn't be living
To see you home or hear you're killed." Lee, smiling at him,
"A soldier's what I won't be, father." That night
He dreamed himself a soldier, an aviator
Duelling with a German above a battle
That looked like waves, he fired his gun and mounted
In steady rhythm; he must have been winged, he suddenly
Plunged and went through the soft and deadly surface
Of the deep sea, wakening in terror.
He heard his old Aunt Jinny chuckling,
Aunt Stella sighing and soothing her, and the southwind
Raging around the gables of the house and through the forest
of the cypresses.

III

They two had unbridled the horses
And tied them with long halters near the thicket
Under Mal Paso bridge and wandered east
Into the narrow cleft, they had climbed the summit
On the right and looked across the sea.
The steep path down, "What are we for?" said Tamar
wearily, "to want and want and not dare know it."
"Because I dropped the faded irises," Lee answered, "you're
unhappy. They were all withered, Tamar.
We have grown up in the same house." "The withered house
Of an old man and a withered woman and an idiot woman.
No wonder if we go mad, no wonder."
They came to the hid stream and Tamar said, "Sweet, green
and cool,

After the mad white April sun: you wouldn't mind, Lee?
Here where it makes a pool: you mustn't look; but you're my
brother. And then

I will stand guard for you." The murmur and splash of
water made his fever fierier; something
Unfelt before kept his eyes seaward: why should he dread
to see the round arm and clear throat
Flash from the hollow stream? He trembled, thinking "O
we are beasts, a beast, what am I for?"

Was the old man right, I must be drunk and a dancer and
feed on the cheap pleasures, or it's dangerous?

Lovely and thoughtless, if she knew me how she'd loathe
and avoid me. Her brother, brother. My sister.

Better the life with the bones, and all at once have broken."
Meanwhile Tamar

Uneasily dipped her wrists, and crouching in the leaf-grown
bank

Saw her breasts in the dark mirror, she trembled backward
From a long ripple and timidly wading entered

The quiet translucence to the thighs. White-shining

Slender and virgin pillar, desire in water

Unhidden and half reflected among the interbranching
ripples,

Arched with alder, over-woven with willow.

Ah Tamar, stricken with strange fever and feeling

Her own desirableness, half-innocent Tamar

Thought, "If I saw a snake in the water he would come now

And kill the snake, he is keen and fearless but he fears

Me I believe." Was it the wild rock coast

Of her breeding, and the reckless wind

In the beaten trees and the gaunt booming crashes

Of breakers under the rocks, or rather the amplitude

And wing-subduing immense earth-ending water

'That moves all the west taught her this freedom? Ah Tamar,
It was not good, not wise, not safe, not provident,
Not even, for custom creates nature, natural,
Though all other license were; and surely her face
Grew lean and whitened like a mask, the lips
Thinned their rose to a split thread, the little breasts
Erected sharp bright buds but the white belly
Shuddered, sucked in. The lips writhed and no voice
Formed, and again, and a faint cry. "Tamar?"
He answered, and she answered, "Nothing. A snake in the
water

Frightened me." And again she called his name.
"What is it, Tamar?" "Nothing. It is cold in the water.
Come, Lee, I have hidden myself all but the head.
Bathe, if you mean to bathe, and keep me company.
I won't look till you're in." He came, trembling.
He unclothed himself in a green depth and dared not
Enter the pool, but stared at the drawn scars
Of the old wound on his leg. "Come, Lee, I'm freezing.
Come, I won't look." He saw the clear-skinned shoulders
And the hollow of her back, he drowned his body
In the watery floor under the cave of foliage,
And heard her sobbing. When she turned, the great blue
eyes
Under the auburn hair, streamed. "Lee.
We have stopped being children; I would have drowned
myself;
If you hadn't taught me swimming—long ago—long ago,
Lee—

When we were children." "Tamar, what is it, what is it?"
"Only that I want . . . death. You lie if you think
Another thing." She slipped face down and lay
In the harmless water, the auburn hair trailed forward

Darkened like weeds, the double arc of the shoulders
Floated, and when he had dragged her to the bank both arms
Clung to him, the white body in a sobbing spasm
Clutched him, he could not disentangle the white desire,
So they were joined (like drowning folk brought back
By force to bitter life) painfully, without joy.
The spasm fulfilled, poor Tamar, like one drowned indeed,
lay pale and quiet
And careless of her nakedness. He, gulfs opening
Between the shapes of his thought, desired to rise and leave
her and was ashamed to.
He lay by her side, the cheek he kissed was cold like a
smooth stone, the blue eyes were half open,
The bright smooth body seemed to have suffered pain, not
love. One of her arms crushed both her breasts,
The other lay in the grass, the fingers clutching toward the
roots of the soft grass. "Tamar,"
He whispered, then she breathed shudderingly and an-
swered, "We have it, we have it. Now I know.
It was my fault. I never shall be ashamed again." He said,
"What shall I do? Go away?
Kill myself, Tamar?" She contracted all her body and
crouched in the long grass, shivering.
"It hurts, there is blood here, I am too cold to bathe myself
again. O brother, brother,
Mine and twice mine. You knew already, a girl has got to
learn. I love you, I chose my teacher.
Mine, it was my doing." She flung herself upon him, cold
white and smooth, with sobbing kisses.
"I am so cold, dearest, dearest." The horses at the canyon
mouth tugged at their halters,
Dug pits under the restless forehooves, shivered in the hill
wind

At sundown, were not ridden till dark, it was near midnight
They came to the old house.

IV

When Jinny Caidwell slept, the old woman with a child's
mind, then Stella Moreland
Invoked her childish-minded dead, or lying blank-eyed in
the dark egged on her dreams to vision,
Suffering for lack of audience, tasting the ecstasy of vision.
This was the vaporous portion
She endured her life in the strength of, in the sea-shaken
loneliness, little loved, nursing an idiot,
Growing bitterly old among the wind-torn Lobos cypress
trunks. (O torture of needle branches
Doubled and gnarled, never a moment of quiet, the north-
wind or the southwind or the northwest.
For up and down the coast they are tall and terrible horse-
men on patrol, alternate giants
Guarding the granite and sand frontiers of the last ocean;
but here at Lobos the winds are torturers,
The old trees endure them. They blew always thwart the
old woman's dreams and sometimes by her bedside
Stood, the south in russety black, the north in white, but the
northwest, wave-green, sea-brilliant,
Scaled like a fish. She had also the sun and moon and
mightier presences in her visions.) Tamar
Entered the room toward morning and stood ghost-like
among the old woman's ghosts. The rolled-up eyes,
Dull white, with little spindles of iris touching the upper
lids, played back the girl's blown candle
Sightlessly, but the spirit of sight that the eyes are tools of
and it made them, saw her. "Ah Helen,"

Cried out the entranced lips, "We thought you were tired of
the wind, we thought you never came now.
My sister's husband lies in the next room, go waken him,
show him your beauty, call him with kisses.
He is old and the spittle when he dreams runs into his
beard, but he is your lover and your brother."
"I am not Helen," she said, "what Helen, what Helen?"
"Who was not the wife but the sister of her man,
Mine was his wife." "My mother?" "And now he is an
old hulk battered ashore. Show him your beauty,
Strip for him, Helen, as when he made you a seaweed bed in
the cave. What if the beard is slimy
And the eyes run, men are not always young and fresh like
you dead women." But Tamar clutching
The plump hand on the coverlet scratched it with her nails,
the old woman groaned but would not waken,
And Tamar held the candle flame against the hand, the soot
striped it, then with a scream
The old woman awoke, sat up, and fell back rigid on the
bed. Tamar found place for the candle
On a little table at the bedside, her freed hands could not
awaken a second answer
In the flesh that now for all its fatness felt like a warmed
stone. But the idiot waked and chuckled,
Waved both hands at the candle saying, "My little star, my
little star, come little star."
And to these three old Cauldwell sighing with sleeplessness
Entered, not noticed, and he stood in the open door. Tamar
was bending
Over the bed, loose hair like burnished metal
Concealed her face and sharply cut across one rounded
shoulder

The thin night-dress had slipped from. The old man her
father
Feared, for a ghost of law-contemptuous youth
Slid through the chilly vaults of the stiff arteries,
And he said, "What is it, Tamar?" "She was screaming in
a dream,
I came to quiet her, now she has gone stiff like iron.
Who is this woman Helen she was dreaming about?"
"Helen? Helen?" he answered slowly and Tamar
Believed she saw the beard and the hands tremble.
"It's too cold for you, Tamar, go back to bed
And I'll take care of her. A common name for women."
Old Jinny clapped her hands, "Little star, little star,
Twinkle all night!" and the stiff form on the bed began
to speak,
In a changed voice and from another mode of being
And spirit of thought: "I cannot think that you have for-
gotten.
I was walking on the far side of the moon,
Whence everything is seen but the earth, and never forgot.
This girl's desire drew me home, we also had wanted
Too near our blood,
And to tangle the interbranching net of generations
With a knot sideways. Desire's the arrow-sprayer
And shoots into the stars. Poor little Tamar
He gave you a luckless name in memory of me
And now he is old forgets mine." "You are that Helen,"
Said Tamar leaning over the fat shape
The quiet and fleshless voice seemed issuing from,
A sound of youth from the old puffed lips, "What Helen?
This man's...
Sister, this body was saying?" "By as much more

As you are of your brother." "Why," laughed Tamar
trembling,
"Hundreds of nasty children do it, and we
Nothing but children." Then the old man: "Lies, lies, lies.
No ghost, a lying old woman. Your Aunt Helen
Died white as snow. She died before your mother died.
Your mother and this old woman always hated her,
This liar, as they hated me. I was too hard a nature
To die of it. Lily and Stella." "It makes me nothing,
My darling sin a shadow and me a doll on wires,"
Thought Tamar with one half her spirit; and the other half
said,
"Poor lies, words without meaning. Poor Aunt Stella,
The voices in her have no minds." "Poor little Tamar,"
Murmured the young voice from the swollen cavern,
"Though you are that woman's daughter, if we dead
Could be sorrowful for anyone but ourselves
I would be sorrowful for you, a trap so baited
Was laid to catch you when the world began,
Before the granite foundation. I too have tasted the sweet
bait.
But you are the luckier, no one came home to me
To say there are no whips beyond death—but only memory,
And that can be endured." The room was quiet a moment,
And Tamar heard the wind moving out-doors. Then the
idiot Jinny Cauldwell
Whose mind had been from birth a crippled bird but when
she was twelve years old her mind's cage
Was covered utterly, like a bird-cage covered with its eve-
ning cloth when lamps are lighted,
And her memory skipped the more than forty years between
but caught stray gleams of the sun of childhood,

She in her crumpled voice: "I'd rather play with Helen,
go away, Stella. Stella pinches me,
Lily laughs at me, Lily and Stella are not my sisters."
"Jinny, Jinny,"
Said the old man shaking like a thin brick house-wall in an
earthquake, "do you remember. Jinny?"
"Jinny don't like the old man," she answered, "give me the
star, give me my star,"
She whined, stretching from bed to reach the candle, "why
have they taken my little star?
Helen would give it to Jinny." Then Stella waking from the
trance sighed and arose to quiet her
According to her night's habit. Tamar said, "You were
screaming in your sleep." "I had great visions.
And I have forgotten them. There, Jinny, there, there. It'll
have the candle, will it? Pretty Jinny.
Will have candle to-morrow. Little Jinny let Aunt Stella
sleep now." Old Cauldwell tottering
Went to his room; then Tamar said, "You were talking
about his sister Helen, my aunt Helen,
You never told me about her." "She has been dead for forty
years, what should we tell you about her?
Now little Jinny, pretty sister." And laying her hands upon
the mattress of the bed
The old woman cradled it up and down, humming a weary
song. Tamar stood vainly waiting
The sleep of the monstrous babe; at length because it would
not sleep went to her room and heard it
Gurgle and whimper an hour; and the tired litanies of the
lullabies; not quiet till daylight.

O swiftness of the swallow and strength
 Of the stone shore, brave beauty of falcons,
 Beauty of the blue heron that flies
 Opposite the color of evening
 From the Carmel River's reed-grown mouth
 To her nest in the deep wood of the deer
 Cliffs of peninsular granite engirdle,
 O beauty of the fountains of the sun
 I pray you enter a little chamber,
 I have given you bodies, I have made you puppets,
 I have made idols for God to enter
 And tiny cells to hold your honey.
 I have given you a dotard and an idiot,
 An old woman puffed with vanity, youth but botched with
 incest,
 O blower of music through the crooked bugles,
 You that make signs of sins and choose the lame for angels,
 Enter and possess. Being light you have chosen the dark
 lamps,
 A hawk the sluggish bodies: therefore God you chose
 Me; and therefore I have made you idols like these idols
 To enter and possess.

 Tamar, finding no hope,
 Slid back on passion, she had sought counsel of the dead
 And found half-scornful pity and found her sin
 Fore-dated; there was honey at least in shame
 And secrecy in silence, and her lover
 Could meet her afield or slip to her room at night
 In serviceable safety. They learned, these two,
 Not to look back nor forward; and but for the hint
 Of vague and possible wreck every transgression

Paints on the storm-edge of the sky, their blue
Though it dulled a shade with custom shone serene
To the fifth moon, when the moon's mark on women
Died out of Tamar. She kept secret the warning,
How could she color such love with perplexed fear?
Her soul walked back and forth like a new prisoner
Feeling the plant of unescapable fate
Root in her body. There was death; who had entered water
To compass love might enter again to escape
Love's fruit; "But O, but O," she thought, "not to die now.
It is less than half a year
Since life turned sweet. If I knew one of the girls
My lover has known
She'd tell me what to do, how to be fruitless,
How to be . . . happy? They do it, they do it, all sin
Grew nothing to us that day in Mal Paso water.
A love sterile and sacred as the stars.
I will tell my lover, he will make me safe,
He will find means . . .
Sterile and sacred, and more than any woman
. . . Unhappy. Miserable," she sobbed, "miserable,
The rough and bitter water about the cliff's foot
Better to breathe."

When Lee was not by her side
She walked the cliffs to tempt them. The calm and large
Pacific surge heavy with summer rolling southeast from a
far origin
Battered to foam among the stumps of granite below.
Tamar watched it swing up the little fjords and fountain
Not angrily in the blowholes; a gray vapor
Breathed up among the buttressed writhings of the cypress
trunks
And branches swollen with blood-red lichen. She went home

And her night was full of foolish dreams, two layers of
dream, unrelative in emotion
Or substance to the pain of her thoughts. One, the under-
current layer that seemed all night continuous,
Concerned the dead (and rather a vision than a dream, for
visions gathered on that house
Like corposant fire on the hoar mastheads of a ship wan-
dering strange waters), brown-skinned families
Came down the river and straggled through the wood to
the sea, they kindled fires by knobs of granite
And ate the sea-food that the plow still turns up rotting
shells of, not only around Point Lobos
But north and south wherever the earth breaks off to sea-
rock: Tamar saw the huddled bodies
Squat by the fires and sleep; but when the dawn came there
was throbbing music meant for daylight
And that weak people went where it led them and were
nothing; then Spaniards, priests and horseback soldiers,
Came down the river and wandered through the wood to
the sea, and hearing the universal music
Went where it led them and were nothing; and the Eng-
lish-speakers
Came down the river and wandered through the wood to
the sea, among them Tamar saw her mother
Walking beside a nameless woman with no face nor breasts;
and the universal music
Led them away and they were nothing; but Tamar led her
father from that flood and saved him,
For someone named a church built on a rock, it was beauti-
ful and white, not fallen to ruin
Like the ruin by Carmel River; she led him to it and made
him enter the door, when he had entered

A new race came from the door and wandered down the
river to the sea and to Point Lobos.
This was the undertow of the dream, obscured by a
brighter surface layer but seeming senseless.
The tides of the sea were quiet and someone said "because
the moon is lost." Tamar looked up
And the moon dwindled, rocketing off through lonely space,
and the people in the moon would perish
Of cold or of a star's fire: then Will Andrews curiously
wounded in the face came saying
"Tamar, don't cry. What do you care? I will take care of
you." Wakening, Tamar thought about him
And how he had stopped coming to see her. Perhaps it was
another man came through her dream,
The wound in the face disguised him, but that morning Lee
having ridden to Mill Creek
To bargain about some fields of winter pasture
Now that the advancing year withered the hill-grass,
Tamar went down and saddled her own pony,
A four-year-old, as white as foam, and cantered
Past San Jose creek-mouth and the Carrows' farm
(Where David Carrow and his fanatical blue eyes,
That afterward saw Christ on the hill, smiled at her passing)
And three miles up the Carmel Valley came
To the Andrews' place where the orchards ran to the river
And all the air was rich with ripening apples.
She would not go to the house; she did not find
Whom she was seeking; at length sadly she turned
Homeward, for Lee might be home within two hours,
And on the Carmel bridge above the water
(Shrunk with summer and shot with water lichen,
The surface scaled with minute scarlet leaves,

The borders green with slimy threads) met whom she sought.

"Tamar," he said, "I've been to see you." "You hadn't For a long time." "I had some trouble with Lee, I thought you didn't want me." While they talked Her eyes tasted his face: was it endurable? Though it lacked the curious gash her dream had given him. . . .

"I didn't want you, you thought?" "Lee said so." "You might have waited

Till Tamar said so." "Well," he answered, "I've been, And neither of you was home but now I've met you."

—Well-looking enough; freckles, light hair, light eyes;

Not tall, but with a chest and hard wide shoulders,

And sitting the horse well—"O I can do it, I can do it,

Help me, God," murmured Tamar in her mind.

"How else—what else can I do?" and said, "Luck, isn't it?

What did you want to see me about?" "I wanted . . .

Because I . . . like you, Tamar."—"Why should I be careful,"

She thought, "if I frighten him off what does it matter,

I have got a little beyond caring." "Let's go down

Into the willow," she said, "we needn't be seen

Talking and someone tell him and make trouble

Here on the bridge." They went to the hidden bank

Under the deep green willows, colored water

Stagnated on its moss up to the stems,

Coarse herbage hid the stirrups, Tamar slid from the saddle

As quietly as the long unwhitening wave

Moulds a sunk rock, and while he tethered the horses,

"I have been lonely," she said. "Not for me, Tamar."

"You think not? Will, now that all's over

And likely we'll not see each other again

Often, nor by ourselves, why shouldn't I tell you . . ."

"What, Tamar?" "There've been moments... hours
then...

When anything you might have asked me for
Would have been given, I'd have done anything
You asked me to, you never asked anything, Will.
I'm telling you this so that you may remember me
As one who had courage to speak truth, you'll meet
So many others." "But now"—he meant to ask,
"Now it's too late, Tamar?" and hadn't courage,
And Tamar thought "Must I go farther and say more?
Let him despise me as I despise myself.
I have got a little beyond caring." "Now?" she said
"Do you think I am changed? You have changed, Will, you
have grown

Older, and stronger I think, your face is firmer;
And carefuller: I have not changed, I am still reckless
To my own injury, and as trustful as a child.
Would I be with you here in the green thicket
If I weren't trustful? If you should harm me, Will,
I'd think it was no harm." She had laid her hand
On the round sunburnt throat and felt it throbbing,
And while she spoke the thought ran through her mind,
"He is only a little boy but if he turns pale
I have won perhaps, for white's the wanting color.
If he reddens I've lost and it's no matter." He did not move
And seemed not to change color and Tamar said,
"Now I must go. Lee will be home soon.
How soft the ground is in the willow shadow.
I have ended with you honestly, Will; remember me
Not afraid to speak truth and not ashamed
To have stripped my soul naked. You have seen all of me.
Good-by." But when she turned he caught her by the arm,
She sickened inward, thinking, "Now it has come.

I have called and called it and I can't endure it.
Ah. A dumb beast." But he had found words now and said,
"How would you feel, Tamar, if all of a sudden
The bird or star you'd broken your heart to have
Flew into your hands, then flew away. O Tamar, Tamar,
You can't go now, you can't." She unresisting
Took the hot kisses on her neck and hair
And hung loose in his arms the while he carried her
To a clean bank of grass in the deep shadow
He laid her there and kneeling by her: "You said you trusted
me.

You are wise, Tamar; I love you so much too well
I would cut my hands off not to harm you." But she,
Driven by the inward spark of life and dreading
Its premature maturity, could not rest
On harmless love, there were no hands to help
In the innocence of love, and like a vision
Came to her the memory of that other lover
And how he had fallen a farther depth
From firmer innocence at Mal Paso, but the stagnant
Autumn water of Carmel stood too far
From the April freshet in the hills. Tamar pushed off
His kisses and stood up weeping and cried
"It's no use, why will you love me till I cry?
Lee hates you and my father is old and old, we can't
Sour the three years he has before he dies."
"I'll wait for you," said the boy, "wait years, Tamar." Then
Tamar

Hiding her face against his throat
So that he felt the tears whispered, "But I . . ."
She sobbed, "Have no patience . . . I can't wait. Will . . .
When I made my soul naked for you
There was one spot . . . a fault . . . a shame

I was ashamed to uncover." She pressed her mouth
Between the muscles of his breast: "I want you and want
you.

You didn't know that a clean girl could want a man.
Now you will take me and use me and throw me away
And I've . . . earned it." "Tamar, I swear by God
Never to let you be sorry, but protect you
With all my life." "This is our marriage," Tamar answered.
"But God would have been good to me to have killed me
Before I told you." The boy feeling her body
Vibrant and soft and sweet in its weeping surrender
Went blind and could not feel how she hated him
That moment; when he awakened she was lying
With the auburn hair muddied and the white face
Turned up to the willow leaves, her teeth were bared.
And sunk in the under lip, a smear of blood
Reddening the corner of the lips. One of her arms
Crushed both her breasts, the other lay in the grass,
The fingers clutching toward the roots of the soft grass.

"O Tamar,"

Murmured the boy, "I love you, I love you. What shall I do?
Go away?

Kill myself, Tamar?" she contracted all her body and
crouched in the long grass, thinking

"That Helen of my old father's never fooled him at least,"
and said, "There is nothing to do, nothing.

It is horribly finished. Keep it secret, keep it secret, Will.
I too was to blame a little.

But I didn't mean . . . this." "I know," he said, "it was
my fault, I would kill myself, Tamar.

To undo it but I loved you so, Tamar." "Loved? You have
hurt me and broken me, the house is broken

And any thief can enter it." "O Tamar!" "You have broken
our crystal innocence, we can never
Look at each other freely again." "What can I do, Tamar?"
"Nothing. I don't know. Nothing.
Never come to the farm to see me." "Where can I see you,
Tamar?" "Lee is always watching me,
And I believe he'd kill us. Listen, Will. To-morrow night
I'll put a lamp in my window,
When all the house is quiet, and if you see it you can climb
up by the cypress. I must go home,
Lee will be home. Will, though you've done to me worse
than I ever dreamed, I love you, you have my soul,
I am your tame bird now."

VI

This was the high plateau of summer and August waning;
white vapors
Breathed up no more from the brown fields nor hung in
the hills; daily the insufferable sun
Rose, naked light, and flaming naked through the pale trans-
parent ways of the air drained gray
The strengths of nature; all night the eastwind streamed
out of the valley seaward, and stars blazed.
The year went up to its annual mountain of death, gilded
with hateful sunlight, waiting rain.
Stagnant waters decayed, the trickling springs that all the
misty-hooded summer had fed
Pendulous green under the granite ocean-cliffs dried and
turned foul, the rock-flowers faded,
And Tamar felt in her blood the filth and fever of the
season. Walking beside the house-wall
Under her window, she resented sickeningly the wounds in
the cypress bark, where Andrews

Climbed to his tryst, disgust at herself choked her, and as
a fire by water
Under the fog-bank of the night lines all the sea and sky
with fire, so her self-hatred
Reflecting itself abroad burned back against her, all the
world growing hateful, both her lovers
Hateful, but the intolerably masculine sun hatefulest of
all. The heat of the season
Multiplied centipedes, the black worms that breed under
loose rock, they call them thousand-leggers,
They invaded the house, their phalloid bodies cracking
underfoot with a bad odor, and dropped
Ceiling to pillow at night, a vile plague though not poison-
ous. Also the sweet and female sea
Was weak with calm, one heard too clearly a mounting
cormorant's wing-claps half a mile off shore;
The hard and dry and masculine tyrannized for a season.
Rain in October or November
Yearly avenges the balance; Tamar's spirit rebelled too soon,
the female fury abiding
In so beautiful a house of flesh. She came to her aunt the
ghost-seer. "Listen to me, Aunt Stella.
I think I am going mad, I must talk to the dead; Aunt
Stella, will you help me?" That old woman
Was happy and proud, no one for years had sought her
for her talent. "Dear Tamar, I will help you.
We must go down into the darkness, Tamar, it is hard and
painful for me." "I am in the darkness
Already, a fiery darkness." "The good spirits will guide
you, it is easy for you; for me, death.
Death, Tamar, I have to die to reach them." "Death's no
bad thing," she answered, "each hour of the day

Has more teeth." "Are you so unhappy, Tamar, the good spirits will help you and teach you." "Aunt Stella, To-night, to-night?" "I groan when I go down to death, your father and brother will come and spoil it." "In the evening we will go under the rocks by the sea." "Well, in the evening." "If they talk to us I'll buy you black silk and white lace."

In and out of the little fjord swam the weak waves
Moving their foam in the twilight. Tamar at one flank, old
Stella at the other, upheld poor Jinny
Among the jags of shattered granite, so they came to the
shingle. Rich, damp and dark the sea's breath
Folding them made amend for days of sun-sickness, but
Jinny among the rubble granite
(They had no choice but take her along with them, who else
would care for the idiot?) slipped, and falling
Gashed knees and forehead, and she whimpered quietly in
the darkness. "Here," said Tamar, "I made you
A bed of seaweed under the nose of this old rock, let Jinny
lie beside you, Aunt Stella,
I'll lay the rug over you both." They lay on the odorous kelp,
Tamar squatted beside them,
The weak sea wavered in her rocks and Venus hung over
the west between the cliff-butts
Like the last angel of the world, the crystal night deepening
The sea and the three women
Kept silence, only Tamar moved herself continually on the
fret of her taut nerves,
And the sea moved, on the obscure bed of her eternity, but
both were voiceless. Tamar
Felt her pulse bolt like a scared horse and stumble and stop,
for it seemed to her a wandering power

Essayed her body, something hard and rounded and invisible
pressed itself for entrance
Between the breasts, over the diaphragm. When she was
forced backward and lay panting, the assault
Failed, the presence withdrew, and in that clearance she
heard her old Aunt Stella monotonously muttering
Words with no meaning in them; but the tidal night under
the cliff seemed full of persons
With eyes, although there was no light but the evening
planet's and her trail in the long water.
Then came a man's voice from the woman, saying, "Que
quieres pobrecita?" and Tamar, "Morir,"
Trembling, and marveling that she lied for no reason, and
said, "Es porque no entiendo,
Anything but ingles." To which he answered, "Ah pobre-
cita," and was silent. And Tamar
Cried, "I will talk to that Helen." But instead another male
throat spoke out of the woman's
Unintelligible gutturals, and it ceased, and the woman
changing voice, yet not to her own:
"An Indian. He says his people feasted here and sang to
their Gods and the tall Gods came walking
Between the tide-marks on the rocks; he says to strip and
dance and he will sing, and his Gods
Come walking." Tamar answered, crying, "I will not, I will
not, tell him to go away and let me
Talk to that Helen." But old Stella after a silence: "He says
No, no, the pregnant women
Would always dance here and the shore belongs to his
people's ghosts nor will they endure another
Unless they are pleased." And Tamar said, "I cannot dance,
drive him away," but while she said it

Her hands accepting alien life and a strange will undid the
fastenings of her garments.
She panted to control them, tears ran down her cheeks, the
male voice chanted
Hoarse discords from the old woman's body, Tamar drew
her beauty
Out of its husks; dwellers on eastern shores
Watch moonrises as white as hers
When the half-moon about midnight
Steps out of her husk of water to dance in heaven:
So Tamar weeping
Slipped every sheath down to her feet, the spirit of the place
Ruling her, she and the evening star sharing the darkness,
And danced on the naked shore
Where a pale couch of sand covered the rocks,
Danced with slow steps, and streaming hair,
Dark and slender
Against the pallid sea-gleam, slender and maidenly
Dancing and weeping . . .
It seemed to her that all her body
Was touched and troubled with polluting presences
Invisible, and whatever had happened to her from her two
lovers
She had been until that hour inviolately a virgin,
Whom now the desires of dead men and dead Gods and a
dead tribe
Used for their common prey . . . dancing and weeping,
Slender and maidenly . . . The chant was changed,
And Tamar's body responded to the change, her spirit
Wailing within her. She heard the brutal voice
And hated it, she heard old Jinny mimic it
In the cracked childish quaver, but all her body
Obeyed it, wakening into wantonness,

Kindling with lust and wilder
Coarseness of insolent gestures,
The senses cold and averse, but the frantic too-governable
flesh
Inviting the assaults of whatever desired it, of dead men
Or Gods walking the tide-marks,
The beautiful girlish body as gracile as a maiden's
Gone beastlike, crouching and widening,
Agape to be entered, as the earth
Gapes with harsh heat-cracks, the inland adobe of sun-worn
valleys
At the end of summer
Opening sick mouths for its hope of the rain,
So her body gone mad
Invited the spirits of the night, her belly and her breasts
Twisting, her feet dashed with blood where the granite
had bruised them,
And she fell, and lay gasping in the sand, on the tide-line.
Darkness
Possessed the shore when the evening star was down; old
Stella
Was quiet in her trance; old Jinny the idiot clucked and par-
roted to herself, there was none but the idiot
Saw whether a God or a troop of Gods came swaggering
along the tide-marks unto Tamar, to use her
Shamefully and return from her, gross and replete shadows,
swaggering along the tide-marks
Against the sea-gleam. After a little the life came back to
that fallen flower; for fear or feebleness
She crept on hands and knees, returning so to the old me-
dium of this infamy. Only
The new tide moved in the night now; Tamar with her
back bent like a bow and the hair fallen forward

Crouched naked at old Stella's feet, and shortly heard the
voice she had cried for. "I am your Helen.
I would have wished you choose another place to meet me
and milder ceremonies to summon me.
We dead have traded power for wisdom, yet it is hard for
us to wait on the maniac living
Patiently, the desires of you wild beasts. You have the
power." And Tamar murmured, "I had nothing,
Desire nor power." And Helen, "Humbler than you were.
She has been humbled, my little Tamar.
And not so clean as the first lover left you, Tamar. Another,
and half a dozen savages,
Dead, and dressed up for Gods." "I have endured it," she
answered. Then the sweet disdainful voice
In the throat of the old woman: "As for me, I chose rather
to die." "How can I kill
A dead woman," said Tamar in her heart, not moving the
lips but the other listened to thought
And answered, "O, we are safe, we shan't fear murder. But,
Tamar, the child will die, and all for nothing
You were submissive by the river, and lived, and endured
fouling. I have heard the wiser flights
Of better spirits, that beat up to the breast and shoulders of
our Father above the star-fire,
Say, 'Sin never buys anything.'" Tamar, kneeling, drew
the thickness of her dragged hair
Over her face and wept till it seemed heavy with blood; and
like a snake lifting its head
Out of a fire, she lifted up her face after a little and said,
"It will live, and my father's
Bitch be proved a liar." And the voice answered, and the
tone of the voice smiled, "Her words

Rhyme with her dancing. Tamar, did you know there were
many of us to watch the dance you danced there,
And the end of the dance? We on the cliff; your mother,
who used to hate me, was among us, Tamar.
But she and I loved each only one man, though it were the
same. We two shared one. You, Tamar,
Are shared by many." And Tamar: "This is your help, I
dug down to you secret dead people
To help me and so I am helped now. What shall I ask more?
How it feels when the last liquid morsel
Slides from the bone? Or whether you see the worm that
burrows up through the eye-socket, or thrill
To the maggot's music in the tube of a dead ear? You stink-
ing dead. That you have no shame
Is nothing: I have no shame: see I am naked, and if my
thighs were wet with dead beasts' drippings
I have suffered no pollution like the worms in yours; and if
I cannot touch you I tell you
There are those I can touch. I have smelled fire and tasted
fire,
And all these days of horrible sunlight, fire
Hummed in my ears, I have worn fire about me like a cloak
and burning for clothing. It is God
Who is tired of the house that thousand-leggers crawl about
in, where an idiot sleeps beside a ghost-seer,
A doting old man sleeps with dead women and does not
know it,
And pointed bones are at the doors
Or climb up trees to the window. I say He has gathered
Fire all about the walls and no one sees it
But I, the old roof is ripe and the rafters
Rotten for burning, and all the woods are nests of horrible
things, nothing would ever clean them

But fire, but I will go to a clean home by the good river."

"You danced, Tamar," replied

The sweet disdainful voice in the mouth of the old woman,

"and now your song is like your dance,

Modest and sweet. Only you have not said it was you,

Before you came down by the seat to dance,

That lit a candle in your closet and laid

Paper at the foot of the candle. We were watching.

And now the wick is nearly down to the heap,

It's God will have fired the house? But Tamar,

It will not burn. You will have fired it, your brother

Will quench it, I think that God would hardly touch

Anything in that house." "If you know everything,"

Cried Tamar, "tell me where to go.

Now life won't do me and death is shut against me

Because I hate you. O believe me I hate you dead people

More than you dead hate me. Listen to me, Helen.

There is no voice as horrible to me as yours,

And the breasts the worms have worked in. A vicious berry

Grown up out of the graveyard for my poison.

But there is no one in the world as lonely as I,

Betrayed by life and death." Like rain breaking a storm

Sobs broke her voice. Holding by a jag of the cliff

She drew herself full height. God who makes beauty

Disdains no creature, nor despised that wounded

Tired and betrayed body. She in the starlight

And little noises of the rising tide

Naked and not ashamed bore a third part

With the ocean and keen stars in the consistence

And dignity of the world. She was white stone,

Passion and despair and grief had stripped away

Whatever is rounded and approachable

In the body of woman, hers looked hard, long lines

Narrowing down from the shoulder-bones, no appeal,
A weapon and no sheath, fire without fuel,
Saying, "Have you anything more inside you
Old fat and sleepy sepulchre, any more voices?
You can do better than my father's by-play
And the dirty tricks of savages, decenter people
Have died surely. I have so passed nature
That God himself, who's dead or all these devils
Would never have broken hell, might speak out of you
Last season thunder and not scare me." Old Stella
Groaned but not spoke, old Jinny lying beside her
Wakened at the word thunder and suddenly chuckling
Began to mimic a storm, "Whoo-whoo" for wind
And "boom-boom-boom" for thunder. Other voices
Wakened far off above the cliff, and suddenly
The farm-bell ringing fire; and on the rock-islets
Sleepy cormorants cried at it. "Why, now He speaks
Another way than out of the fat throat,"
Cried Tamar, and prayed, "O strong and clean and terrible
Spirit and not father punish the hateful house.
Fire eat the walls and roofs, drive the red beast
Through every wormhole of the rotting timbers
And into the woods and into the stable, show them,
These liars, that you are alive." Across her voice
The bell sounded and old Jinny mimicking it,
And shouts above the cliff. "Look, Jinny, look,"
Cried Tamar, "the sky'll be red soon, come and we'll dress
And watch the bonfire." Yet she glanced no thought
At her own mermaid nakedness but gathering
The long black serpents of beached seaweed wove
Wreaths for old Jinny and crowned and wound her. Mean-
while
The bell ceased ringing and Stella ceased her moan.

And in the sudden quietness, "Tamar," she said
In the known voice of Helen so many years
Dead, "though you hate me utterly, Tamar, I
Have nothing to give back, I was quite emptied
Of hate and love and the other fires of the flesh
Before your mother gave the clay to my lover
To mould you a vessel to hold them." Tamar, winding
Her mindless puppet in the sea-slough mesh
Said over her shoulder, hardly turning, "Why then
Do you trouble whom you don't hate?" "Because we hunger
And hunger for life," she answered. "Did I come uncalled?
You called me, you have more hot and blind, wild-blooded
And passionate life than any other creature.
How could I ever leave you while the life lasts?
God pity us both, a cataract life
Dashing itself to pieces in an instant.
You are my happiness, you are my happiness and death eats
you.
I'll leave you when you are empty and cold and join us.
Then pity me, then Tamar, me flitting
The chilly and brittle pumice-tips of the moon,
While the second death
Corrodes this shell of me, till it makes my end."
But Tamar would not listen to her, too busily
Decking old Jinny for the festival fire,
And sighing that thin and envious ghost forsook
Her instrument, and about that time harsh pain
Wrung Tamar's loins and belly, and pain and terror
Expelled her passionate fancies, she cried anxiously,
"Stella, Aunt Stella, help me, will you?" and thinking,
"She hears when Jinny whimpers," twistingly pinched
Her puppet's arm until it screamed. Old Stella
Sat up on the seaweed bed and turned white eyes

No pupils broke the diffused star-gleam in
Upon her sixty-year-old babe, that now
Crouched whimpering, huddled under the slippery leaves
And black whips of the beach; and by it stood gleaming
Tamar, anguished, all white as the blank balls
That swept her with no sight but vision: old Stella
Did not awake yet but a voice blew through her,
Not personal like the other, and shook her body
And shook her hands: "It was no good to do too soon, your
fire's out, you'd been patient for me
It might have saved two fires." But Tamar: "Stella.
I'm dying: or it is dying: wake up Aunt Stella.
O pain, pain, help me." And the voice: "She is mine while I
use her. Scream, no one will hear but this one
Who has no mind, who has not more help than July rain."
And Tamar, "What are you, what are you, mocking me?
More dirt and another dead man? O," she moaned, pressing
her flanks with both her hands, and bending
So that her hair across her knees lay on the rock. It an-
swered, "Not a voice from carrion.
Breaker of trees and father of grass, shepherd of clouds and
waters, if you had waited for me
You'd be the luckier." "What shall I give you," Tamar cried,
"I have given away——" Pain stopped her, and then
Blood ran, and she fell down on the round stones, and felt
nor saw nothing. A little later
Old Stella Moreland woke out of her vision, sick and shaking.

Tamar's mind and suffering
Returned to her neither on the sea-rocks of the midnight nor
in her own room; but she was lying
Where Lee her brother had lain, nine months before, after
his fall, in the big westward bedroom.

She lay on the bed, and in one corner was a cot for Stella
who nursed her, and in the other
A cot for the idiot, whom none else would care for but old
Stella. After the ache of awakening
And blank dismay of the spirit come home to a spoiled
house, she lay thinking with vacant wonder
That life is always an old story, repeating itself always like
the leaves of a tree
Or the lips of an idiot; that herself like Lee her brother
Was picked up bleeding from the sea-boulders under the
sea-cliff and carried up to be laid
In the big westward bedroom . . . was he also fouled with
ghosts before they found him, a gang
Of dead men beating him with rotten bones, mouthing his
body, piercing him? "Stella," she whispered,
"Have I been sick long?" "There, sweetheart, lie still; three
or four days." "Has Lee been in to see me?"
"Indeed he has, hours every day." "He'll come, then," and
she closed her eyes and seemed to sleep.
Someone tapped at the door after an hour and Tamar said,
"Come, Lee." But her old father
Came in, and he said nothing, but sat down by the bed;
Tamar had closed her eyes. In a little
Lee entered, and he brought a chair across the room and sat
by the bed. "Why don't you speak,
Lee?" And he said, "What can I say except I love you,
sister?" "Why do you call me sister,
Not Tamar?" And he answered, "I love you, Tamar." Then
old Aunt Stella said, "See, she's much better.
But you must let her rest. She'll be well in a few days; now
kiss her, Lee, and let her rest."
Lee bent above the white pure cameo-face on the white pil-
low, meaning to kiss the forehead.

But Tamar's hands caught him, her lips reached up for his:
while Jinny the idiot clapped and chuckled
And made a clucking noise of kisses; then, while Lee sought
to untwine the arms that yoked his neck,
The old man, rising: "I opened the Book last night thinking
about the sorrows of this house,
And it said, 'If a man find her in the field and force her and
lie with her, nevertheless the damsel
Has not earned death, for she cried out and there was none
to save her.' Be glad, Tamar, my sins
Are only visited on my son, for you there is mercy." "David,
David,
Will you be gone and let her rest now," cried old Stella, "do
you mean to kill her with a Bible?"
"Woman," he answered, "has God anything to do with you?
She will not die, the Book
Opened and said it." Tamar, panting, leaned against the
pillow and said, "Go, go. Tomorrow
Say all you please; what does it matter?" And the old man
said, "Come, Lee, in the morning she will hear us."
Tamar stretched out her trembling hand, Lee did not touch
it, but went out ahead of his father.
So they were heard in the hall, and then their foot-steps on
the stair. Tamar lay quiet and rigid,
With open eyes and tightening fists, with anger like a coiled
steel spring in her throat but weakness
And pain for the lead weights. After an hour she said,
"What does he mean to do? Go away?
Kill himself, Stella?" Stella answered, "Nothing, nothing,
they talk, it's to keep David quiet.
Your father is off his head a little, you know. Now rest you,
little Tamar, smile and be sleepy,

Scold them to-morrow." "Shut the sun out of my eyes then,"
Tamar said, but the idiot Jinny
Made such a moaning when the windows were all curtained
they needed to let in one beam
For dust to dance in; then the idiot and the sick girl slept.
About the hour of sundown
Tamar was dreaming trivially—an axman chopping down a
tree and field-mice scampering
Out of the roots—when suddenly like a shift of wind the
dream
Changed and grew awful, she watched dark horsemen coming
out of the south, squadrons of hurrying horsemen
Between the hills and the dark sea, helmeted like the soldiers
of the war in France,
Carrying torches. When they passed Mal Paso Creek the
columns
Veered, one of the riders said, "Here it began," but another
answered, "No. Before the granite
Was bedded to build the world on." So they formed and
galloped north again, hurrying squadrons,
And Tamar thought, "When they come to the Carmel River
then it will happen. They have passed Mal Paso."

Meanwhile—
Who has ever guessed to what odd ports, what sea buoying
the keels, a passion blows its bulkless
Navies of vision? High up in the hills
Ramon Ramirez, who was herdsman of the Cauldwell
herds, stood in his cabin doorway
Rolling a cigarette a half-hour after sundown, and he felt
puffs from the south
Come down the slope of stunted redwoods, so he thought
the year was turning at last, and shortly

There would come showers; he walked therefore a hundred
yards to westward, where a point of the hill
stood over Wildcat Canyon and the sea was visible; he saw
Point Lobos gemmed in the darkening
pale yellow sea; and on the point the barn-roofs and the
house-roof breaking up through the blackness
of twilight cypress tops, and over the sea a cloud forming.
The evening darkened. Southwestward
a half-mile loop of the coast-road could be seen, this side
Mal Paso. Suddenly a nebular company
of lights rounded the hill, Ramirez thought the headlights
of a car sweeping the road,
but in a moment saw that it was horsemen, each carrying a
light, hurrying northward,
moving in squads he judged of twenty or twenty-five, he
counted twelve or thirteen companies
when the brush broke behind him and a horseman rode the
headlong ridge like level ground,
helmeted, carrying a torch. Followed a squad of twelve,
helmeted, cantering the headlong ridge
like level ground. He thought in the nervous innocence
of the early war, they must be Germans.

Tamar awoke out of her dream and heard old Jinny saying,
"Dear sister Helen, kiss me
as you kiss David. I was watching under a rock, he took
your clothes off and you kissed him
so hard and hard, I love you too, Helen; you hardly ever
kiss me." Tamar lay rigid,
breathless to listen to her; it was well known in the house
that under the shell of imbecility
speech and a spirit however subdued existed still; there
were waking flashes, and more often

She talked in sleep and proved her dreams were made out of
clear memories, childhood sights and girlhood
Fancies, before the shadow had fallen; so Tamar craving
food for passion listened to her,
And heard: "Why are you cross, Helen? I won't peek if
you'd rather I didn't. Darling Helen,
I love him, too; I'd let him play with me the way he does
with you if he wanted to.
And Lily and Stella hate me as much as they hate you." All
she said after was so mumbled
That Tamar could not hear it, could only hear the mumble,
and old Aunt Stella's nasal sleep
And the sea murmuring. When the mumbled voice was
quiet it seemed to Tamar
A strange thing was preparing, an inward pressure
Grew in her throat and seemed to swell her arms and hands
And join itself with a fluid power
Streaming from somewhere in the room—from Jinny?
From Stella?—and in a moment the heavy chair
That Lee had sat in, tipped up, rose from the floor,
And floated to the place he had brought it from
Five hours ago. The power was then relaxed,
And Tamar could breathe and speak. She awaked old Stella
And trembling told her what she had seen; who laughed
And answered vaguely so that Tamar wondered
Whether she was still asleep, and let her burrow
In her bed again and sleep. Later that night
Tamar too slept, but shudderingly, in snatches,
For fear of dreaming. A night like years. In the gray of
morning
A horse screamed from the stableyard and Tamar
Heard the thud of hooves lashing out and timbers
Splintering, and two or three horses broken loose

Galloped about the grounds of the house. She heard men
calling,
And down-stairs Lee in a loud angry tone
Saying "Someone's pitched the saw-buck and the woodpile
Into the horse-corral." Then Tamar thought
"The same power moved his chair in the room, my hatred,
my hatred,
Disturbing the house because I failed to burn it.
I must be quiet and quiet and quiet and keep
The serving spirits of my hid hatred quiet
Until my time serves too. Helen you shadow
Were never served so handily." Stella had awakened,
And Tamar asking for a drink of water
She waddled to fetch it and met Lee at the door.
"O Lee," she said, "that noise—what ever has happened?"
He: "I don't know. Some fool has pitched the whole wood
pile
Into the horse-corral. Is Tamar awake?
I want to see Tamar." He entered the room
As Stella left it. Old withered Aunt Jinny
Sat up in her bed saying "David, David," but Lee
Kneeling at Tamar's bedside, "O Tamar, Tamar.
The old man's out-doors tottering after the horses
So I can see you a minute. O why, why, why,
Didn't you tell me, Tamar? I'd have taken you up
In my arms and carried you to the end of the world."
"How it's turned sour," she thought, "I'd have been glad of
this
Yesterday," and she clinched her finger-nails
Into her palms under the bed-covers,
Saying, "Tell you—what? What have they told you," she
asked
With a white sidelong smile, "people are always lying?"

"Tamar, that you—that we . . . O I've lived hell
Four or five days now." "You look well enough,"
She answered, "put yours by mine," laying her white, lean,
And somewhat twitching hand on the counterpane,
"Mine used to manage a bridle as well as yours
And now look at them. I don't suppose you want me
Now, but it doesn't matter. You used to come to my bed
With something else than pity, convenient, wasn't it?
Not having to ride to Monterey?" He answered frowning,
"However much you hurt me I am very glad too
That all the joys and memories of a love
As great and as forbidden as ours are nothing to you
Or worse than nothing, because I have to go away,
Two days from now, and stay till the war's over
And you are married and father is dead. I've promised him
Never to see him again, never to see his face.
He didn't ask it because he thinks his Book
Told him I'm to be killed. That's foolishness,
But make your peace with him and thank God for that.
What his Book told him." "So here's the secret
I wasn't strong enough yesterday to hear.
I thought maybe you meant to kill yourself."
"Thanks, Tamar. The old man thinks I don't need to." "O
You beast," she said, "you runaway dog.
I wish you joy of your dirty Frenchwomen
You want instead of me. Take it, take it.
Old people in their dotage gabble the truth,
You won't live long." "What can I say, Tamar?
I'm sorry, I'm sorry, I'm sorry." "But go away,"
She said, "And if you'll come again to-night
Maybe I'll tell you mine, my secret."

That morning

Ramon Ramirez who watched the Cauldwell cattle

Up in the hills kept thinking of his vision
Of helmets carrying torches; he looked for tracks
On the ridge where he had seen the riders cantering,
And not a bush was broken, not a hoof-mark
Scarred the sear grass. At noon he thought he'd ride
To Vogel's place taking his lunch in the saddle
And tell someone about it. At the gap in the hill
Where storm-killed redwoods line both sides he met
Johnny Cabrera with a flaming bundle
Of dead twigs and dry grass tied with brown cord.
He smelled the smoke and saw the flame sag over
On a little wind from the east, and said in Spanish
"Eh Johnny, are you out of matches?" who answered ~~ash-~~
ing

His white teeth in a smile, "I'm carrying fire to Lobo
If God is willing," and walked swinging ahead,
Singing to himself the fool south-border couplet
"No tengo tabaco, no tengo papel,
No tengo dinero, God damn it to hell,"
And Ramon called "Hey Johnny," but he would not stop
Nor answer, and thinking life goes wild at times
Ramon came to the hill-slope under Vogel's
And smelled new smoke and saw the clouds go up
And this same Johnny with two other men
Firing the brush to make spring pasture. Ramon
Felt the scalp tighten on his temples and thought best
Not to speak word of either one of his visions,
Though he talked with the men, they told him Tamar
Caldwell

Was sick, and Lee had enlisted.

The afternoon

Was feverish for so temperate a sea-coast
And terribly full of light, the sea like a hard mirror

Reverberated the straight and shining serpents
That fell from heaven and Tamar dreamed in a doze
She was hung naked by that tight cloth bandage
Half-way between sea and sky, beaten on by both,
Burning with light; wakening she found she had tumbled
The bed-clothes to the floor and torn her night-gown
To rags, and was alone in the room, and blinded
By the great glare of sun in the western windows.
She rose and shut the curtains though they had told her
She mustn't get out of bed, and finding herself
Able to walk she stood by the little window
That looked southeast from the south bay of the room
And saw the smoke of burning brushwood slopes
Tower up out of the hills in the windless weather
Like an enormous pinetree. "Everybody
But me has luck with fire," she thought to herself,
"But I can walk now," and returned to bed
And drew the sheets over her flanks, but leaving
The breasts and the shoulders bare. In half an hour
Stella and old Jinny came into the room
With the old man David Cauldwell. Stella hastily
Drew up the sheet to Tamar's throat but Tamar
Saying, "You left the curtains open and the sun
Has nearly killed me," doubled it down again,
And David Cauldwell, trembling: "Will you attempt
Age and the very grave, uncovering your body
To move the old bones that seventy years have broken
And dance your bosoms at me through a mist of death?
Though I know that you and your brother have utterly de-
spised
The bonds of blood, and daughter and father are no closer
bound,

And though this house spits out all goodness, I am old, I am
old, I am old,
What do you want of me?" He stood tottering and wept,
Covering his eyes and beard with shaken old hands,
And Tamar, having not moved, "Nothing," she said,
"Nothing, old man. I have swum too deep into the mud
For this to sicken me; and as you say, there are neither
Brother nor sister, daughter nor father, nor any love
This side the doorways of the damnable house.
But I have a wildbeast of a secret hidden
Under the uncovered breast will eat us all up
Before Lee goes." "It is a lie, it is a lie, it is all a lie.
Stella you must go out, go out of the room Stella,
Not to hear the sick and horrible imaginations
A sick girl makes for herself. Go Stella." "Indeed I won't,
David." "You—you—it is still my house." "To let you kill
her with bad words
All out of the Bible—indeed I won't." "Go, Stella," said
Tamar.
"Let me talk to this old man, and see who has suffered
When you come back. I am out of pity, and you and Jinny
Will be less scorched on the other side of the door." After
a third refusal
The old woman went, leading her charge, and Tamar: "You
thought it was your house? It is me they obey.
It is mine, I shall destroy it. Poor old man I have earned
authority." "You have gone mad," he answered.
And she: "I'll show you our trouble, you sinned, your old
book calls it, and repented: that was foolish.
I was unluckier, I had no chance to repent, so I learned
something, we must keep sin pure
Or it will poison us, the grain of goodness in a sin is poison.
Old man, you have no conception

Of the freedom of purity. Lock the door, old man, I am
telling you a secret." But he trembling,
"O God thou hast judged her guiltless, the Book of thy word
spake it, thou hast the life of the young man
My son..." and Tamar said, "Tell God we have revoked
relationship in the house, he is not
Your son nor you my father." "Dear God, blot out her
words, she has gone mad. Tamar, I will lock it,
Lest anyone should come and hear you, and I will wrestle
for you with God, I will not go out
Until you are His." He went and turned the key and Tamar
said, "I told you I have authority.
You obey me like the others, we pure have power. Perhaps
there are other ways, but I was plunged
In the dirt of the world to win it, and, O father, so I will
call you this last time, dear father
You cannot think what freedom and what pleasure live in
having abjured laws, in having
Annulled hope, I am now at peace." "There is no peace,
there is none, there is none, there is no peace
But His," he stammered, "but God's." "Not in my arms, old
man, on these two little pillows? Your son
Found it there, and another, and dead men have defiled me.
You that are half dead and half living,
Look, poor old man. That Helen of yours, when you were
young, where was her body more desirable,
Or was she lovinger than I? You know it is forty years ago
that we revoked
Relationships in the house." "He never forgives, He never
forgives, evil punishes evil
With the horrible mockery of an echo." "Is the echo louder
than the voice, I have surpassed her,

Yours was the echo, time stands still, old man, you'll learn
when you have lived at the muddy root
Under the rock of things; all times are now, to-day plays on
last year and the inch of our future
Made in the first morning of the world. You named me for
the monument in a desolate graveyard,
Fool, and I say you were deceived, it was out of me that
fire lit you and your Helen, your body
Joined with your sister's
Only because I was to be named Tamar and to love my
brother and my father.
I am the fountain." But he, shuddering, moaned, "You have
gone mad, you have gone mad, Tamar,"
And twisted his old hands muttering, "I fear hell. O Tamar,
the nights I have spent in agony,
Ages of pain, when the eastwind ran like glass under the
peeping stars or the southwest wind
Plowed in the blackness of the tree. You—a little thing has
driven you mad, a moment of suffering,
But I for more than forty years have lain under the moun-
tains and looked down into hell."
"One word," she said, "that was not written in the book of
my fears. I did indeed fear pain
Before peace found me, or death, never that dream. Old
man, to be afraid is the only hell
And dead people are quit of it, I have talked with the dead."
"Have you—with her?" "Your pitiful Helen?"
She is always all about me; if you lay in my arms, old man,
you would be with her. Look at me,
Have you forgotten—your Helen?" He in torture
Groaned like a beast, but when he approached the bed she
laughed, "Not here, behind you." And he blindly

Clutching at her, she left the coverlet in his hands and slipping free at the other side
Saw in a mirror on the wall her own bright throat and shoulder and just beyond them the haggard
Open-mouthed mask, the irreverent beard and blind red eyes. She caught the mirror from its fastening
And held it to him, reverse. "Here is her picture, Helen's picture, look at her, why is she always
Crying and crying?" When he turned the frame and looked, then Tamar: "See that is her lover's.
The hairy and horrible lips to kiss her, the drizzling eyes to eat her beauty, happiest of women
If only he were faithful; he is too young and wild and lovely, and the lusts of his youth
Lead him to paw strange beds." The old man turned the glass and gazed at the blank side, and turned it
Again face towards him, he seemed drinking all the vision in it, and Tamar: "Helen, Helen,
I know you are here present; was I humbled in the night lately and you exulted?
See here your lover. I think my mother will not envy you now, your lover, Helen, your lover,
The mouth to kiss you, the hands to fondle secret places." Then the old man sobbing, "It is not easy
To be old, mocked, and a fool." And Tamar, "What, not yet, you have not gone mad yet? Look, old fellow.
These rags drop off, the bandages hid something but I'm done with them. See . . . I am the fire
Burning the house." "What do you want, what do you want?" he said, and stumbled toward her, weeping.
"Only to strangle a ghost and to destroy the house. Spit on the memory of that Helen

You might have anything of me." And he groaning, "When
I was young
I thought it was my fault, I am old and know it was hers,
night after night, night after night
I have lain in the dark, Tamar, and cursed her." "And
now?" "I hate her, Tamar." "O," said Tamar gently,
"It is enough, she has heard you. Now unlock the door, old
father, and go, and go." "Your promise,
Tamar, the promise, Tamar." "Why I might do it, I have no
feeling of revolt against it.
Though you have forgotten that fear of hell why should I
let you
Be mocked by God?" And he, the stumpage of his teeth
knocking together, "You think, you think
I'll go to the stables and a rope from a rafter
Finish it for you?" "Dear, I am still sick," she answered,
"you don't want to kill me? A man
Can wait three days: men have lived years and years on
the mere hope."

Meanwhile the two old women
Sat in their room, old Stella sat at the window looking south
into the cypress boughs, and Jinny
On her bed's edge, rocking her little withered body back-
ward and forward, and said vacantly,
"Helen, what do you do the times you lock the door to be
alone, and Lily and Stella
Wonder where David's ridden to?" After a while she said
again, "Do tell me, sister Helen,
What you are doing the times you lock the door to be alone,
and Lily and Stella wonder
Where David's ridden to?" And a third time she repeated,
"Darling sister Helen, tell me

What you are doing the times you lock the door to be alone,
and Lily and Stella wonder
Where David's riding?" Stella seemed to awake, catching
at breath, and not in her own voice,
"What does she mean," she said, "my picture, picture? O!
the mirror—I read in a book, Jinny.
A story about lovers; I never had a lover, I read about them;
—I won't look, though.
With all that blind abundance, so much of life and blood,
that sweet and warming blaze of passion,
She has also a monkey in her mind." "Tell me the story
about the picture." "Ugh, if she plans
To humble herself utterly . . . You may peek, Jinny.
Try if you can, shut both eyes, draw them back into your
forehead, and look, look, look
Over the eyebrows, no, like this, higher up, up where the
hair grows, now peek, Jinny. Can't you
See through the walls? You can. Look, look, Jinny. As if
they'd cut a window. I used to tell you
That God could see into caves: you are like God now: peek,
Jinny." "I can see something.
It's in the stable, David's come from Monterey, he's hanging
the saddle on a peg there . . ."
"Jinny, I shall be angry. That's not David,
It's Lee, don't look into the stable, look into the bedroom,
you know, Jinny, the bedroom,
Where we left Tamar on the bed." "O that's too near, it
hurts me, it hurts my head, don't scold me, Helen.
How can I see if I'm crying? I see now clearly."
"What do you see?" "I see through walls, O, I'm like God,
Helen. I see the wood and plaster
And see right through them." "What? What are they
doing?" "How can you be there and here, too, Helen?"

"It's Tamar, what is she doing?" "I know it's you, Helen,
because you have no hair
Under the arms, I see the blue veins under the arms."
"Well, if it's me, what is she doing?
Is she on the bed? What is she saying?" "She is on fire,
Helen, she has white fire all around you
Instead of clothes, and that is why you are laughing with so
pale a face." "Does she let him do
Whatever he wants to, Jinny?" "He says that he hates . . .
somebody . . . and then you laughed for he had a rope
Around his throat a moment, the beard stuck out over it."
"O Jinny, it wasn't I that laughed,
It was that Tamar, Tamar, Tamar, she has bought him for
nothing. She and her mother both to have him,
The old hollow fool." "What do they want him for, Helen?"
"To plug a chink, to plug a chink, Jinny,
In the horrible vanity of women. Lee's come home, now I
could punish her, she's past hurting,
Are they huddled together, Jinny? What, not yet, not yet?"
"You asked for the key but when he held it
You ran away from him." "What do I want, what do I
want, it is frightful to be dead, what do I . . .
Without power, and no body or face. To kill her, kill her?
There's no hell and curse God for it . . ."

Lee Cauldwell childishly
Loved hearing the spurs jingle, and because he felt
"After to-morrow I shan't wear them again,
Nor straddle a pony for many a weary month and year,
Maybe forever," he left them at his heels
When he drew off the chaps and hung the saddle
On the oak peg in the stable-wall. He entered the house
Slowly, he had taken five drinks in Monterey

And saw his tragedy of love, sin, and war
At the disinterested romantic angle
Misted with not unpleasing melancholy,
Over with, new adventure ahead, a perilous cruise
On the other ocean, and great play of guns
On the other shore . . . at the turn of the stair he heard
Hands hammering a locked door, and a voice unknown to
him

Crying, "Tamar, I loved you for your flame of passion
And hated you for its deeds, all that we dead
Can love or hate with: and now will you crust flame
With filth, submit? Submit? Tamar,
The defilement of the tideline dead was nothing
To this defilement." Then Lee jingling his spurs,
Jumped four steps to the landing. "Who is there? You,
Aunt Stella?" Old gray Aunt Jinny like a little child
Moaning drew back from him, and the mouth of Stella:
"A man that's ready to cross land and water
To set the world in order can't be expected
To leave his house in order." And Lee, "Listen, Aunt
Stella,

Who are you playing, I mean what voice out of the world of
the dead

Is speaking from you?" She answered, "Nothing. I was
something

Forty years back but now I'm only the bloodhound

To bay at the smell of what they're doing in there."

"Who? Tamar? Blood?" "Too close in blood, I am the
blood-stain

On the doorsill of a crime, she does her business

Under her own roof mostly." "Tamar, Tamar,"

Lee called, shaking the door. She from within

Answered "I am here, Lee. Have you said good-by

To Nita and Conchita in Monterey
And your fat Fanny? But who is the woman at the door
Making the noise?" He said, "Open the door;
Open the door, Tamar." And she, "I opened it for you,
You are going to France to knock at other doors.
I opened it for you and others." "What others?" "Ask her,"
Said the young fierce voice from old Aunt Stella's lips,
"What other now?" "She is alone there," he answered,
"A devil is in you. Tamar," he said, "tell her
You are alone." "No, Lee, I am asking in earnest,
Who is the woman making the noise out there?
Someone you've brought from Monterey? Tell her to go:
Father is here." "Why have you locked it, why have you
locked it?"

He felt the door-knob turning in his hand
And the key shook the lock; Tamar stood in the doorway
Wrapped in a loose blue robe that the auburn hair
Burned on, and beyond her the old man knelt by the bed,
His face in the lean twisted hands. "He was praying for me,"
Tamar said quietly. "You are leaving to-morrow,
He has only one child." Then the old man lifting a face
From which the flesh seemed to have fallen, and the eyes
Dropped and been lost: "What will you do to him, Tamar?
Tamar, have mercy.

He was my son, years back." She answered, "I am glad
That you know who has power in the house"; and he
Hid the disfigured face, between his wrists,
The beard kept moving, they thought him praying to God.
And Tamar said, "It is coming to the end of the bad story,
That needn't have been bad only we fools
Botch everything, but a dead fool's the worst,
This old man's sister who rackets at the doors
And drove me mad, although she is nothing but a voice,

Dead, shelled, and the shell rotted, but she had to meddle
In the decencies of life here. Lee, if you truly
Lust for the taste of a French woman I'll let you go
For fear you die unsatisfied and plague
Somebody's children with a ghost's hungers
Forty years after death. Do I care, do I care?
You shan't go, Lee. I told the old man I have a secret
That will eat us all up . . . and then, dead woman,
What will you have to feed on? You spirits flicker out
Too speedily, forty years is a long life for a ghost
And you will only famish a little longer
To whom I'd wish eternity." "O Tamar, Tamar,"
It answered out of Stella's mouth, "has the uttermost
Not taught you anything yet, not even that extinction
Is the only terror?" "You lie too much," she answered,
"You'll enter it soon and not feel any stitch
Of fear afterwards. Listen, Lee, your arms
Were not the first man's to encircle me, and that spilled life
Losing which let me free to laugh at God,
I think you had no share in." He trembled, and said
"O Tamar has your sickness and my crime
Cut you so deep? A lunatic in a dream
Dreams nearer things than this." "I'd never have told you,"
She answered, "if his vicious anger—after I'd balanced
Between you a long time and then chose you—
Hadn't followed his love's old night-way to my window
And kindled fire in the room when I was gone,
The spite-fire that might easily have eaten up
And horribly, our helpless father, or this innocent
Jinny . . ." "He did it, he did it, forgive me, Tamar.
I thought that you gone mad . . . Tamar, I know
That you believe what you are saying but I
Do not believe you. There was no one." "The signal

Was a lamp in the window, perhaps some night
He'd come still if you'd set a lamp into my window.
And when he climbed out of the cypress tree
Then you would know him." "I would mark him to know.
But it's not true." "Since I don't sleep there now
You might try for the moth; if he doesn't come
I'll tell you his name to-morrow." Then the old man jerking
Like dry bones wired pulled himself half erect
With clutching at the bed-clothes: "Have mercy, Tamar.
Lee, there's a trick in it, she is a burning fire,
She is packed with death. I have learned her, I have learned
her, I have learned her,
Too cruel to measure strychnine, too cunning-cruel
To snap a gun, aiming ourselves against us."
Lee answered, "There is almost nothing here to understand.
If we all did wrong why have we all gone mad
But me, I haven't a touch of it. Listen, dead woman,
Do you feel any light here?" "Fire—as much light
As a bird needs," the voice from the old woman
Answered, "I am the gull on the butt of the mast
Watching the ship founder, I'll fly away home
When you go down, or a swallow above a chimney
Watching the brick and mortar fly in the earthquake."
"I'll just go look at the young cypress bark
Under her window," he said, "it might have taken
The bite of a thief's hob-nails." When he was gone
And jingling down the stair, then Tamar: "Poor people,
Why do you cry out so? I have three witnesses,
The old man that died to-day, and a dead woman
Forty years dead, and an idiot, and only one of you
Decently quiet. There is the great and quiet water
Reaching to Asia, and in an hour or so
The still stars will show over it but I am quieter

Inside than even the ocean or the stars.
Though I have to kindle paper flares of passion
Sometimes, to fool you with. But I was thinking
Last night, that people all over the world
Are doing much worse and suffering much more than we
This wartime, and the stars don't wink, and the ocean
Storms perhaps less than usual." Then the dead woman,
"Wild life, she has touched the ice-core of things and learned
Something, that frost burns worse than fire." "O, it's not
true,"

She answered, "frost is kind; why, almost nothing
You say is true. Helen, do you remember at all
The beauty and strangeness of this place? Old cypresses
The sailor wind works into deep-sea knots
A thousand years; age-reddened granite
That was the world's cradle and crumbles apieces
Now that we're all grown up, breaks out at the roots;
And underneath it the old gray-granite strength
Is neither glad nor sorry to take the seas
Of all the storms forever and stand as firmly
As when the red hawk wings of the first dawn
Streamed up the sky over it: there is one more beautiful
thing,

Water that owns the north and west and south
And is all colors and never is all quiet,
And the fogs are its breath and float along the branches of
the cypresses.

And I forgot the coals of ruby lichen
That glow in the fog on the old twigs. To live here
Seventy-five years or eighty, and have children,
And watch these things fill up their eyes, would not
Be a bad life . . . I'd rather be what I am,
Feeling this peace and joy, the fire's joy's burning,

And I have my peace." Then the old man in the dull
And heartless voice answered, "The strangest thing
Is that He never speaks: we know we are damned, why
should He speak? The book
Is written already. Cauldwell, Cauldwell, Cauldwell, Cauld-
well.

Eternal death, eternal wrath, eternal torture, eternity, eter-
nity, eternity . . .

That's after the judgment." "You needn't have any fear,
old father,

Of anything to happen after to-morrow," Tamar answered,
"we have turned every page

But the last page, and now our paper's so worn out and tis-
suey I can read it already

Right through the leaf, print backwards."

It was twilight in the room, the shiny side of the wheel
Dipping toward Asia; and the year dipping toward winter
encrimsoned the grave spokes of sundown;

And jingling in the door Lee Cauldwell with the day's-
death flush upon his face: "Father:

There are marks on the cypress: a hell of a way to send your
soldier off: I want to talk to her

Alone. You and the women—" he flung his hand out,
meaning "go." The old man without speaking

Moved to the door, propping his weakness on a chair and on
the door-frame, and Lee entering

Passed him and the two women followed him—three, if
Stella were one—but when they had passed the doorway

Old Cauldwell turned, and tottering in it: "Death is the
horror," he said, "nothing else lasts, pain passes,

Death's the only trap. I am much too wise to swing myself
in the stable on a rope from a rafter. Helen, Helen,

You know about death." "It is cold," she answered from the hallway; "unspeakably hopeless . . ."

"You curse of talkers,
Go," he said, and he shut the door against them and said,
"Slut, how many, how many?" She, laughing,
"I knew you would be sweet to me: I am still sick: did you find marks in the bark? I am still sick, Lee;
You don't intend killing me?" "Flogging, whipping, whipping, is there anything male about here
You haven't used yet? Agh, you mouth, you open mouth.
But I won't touch you." "Let me say something,"
She answered, standing dark against the west in the window, the death of the winter rose of evening
Behind her little high-poised head, and threading the brown twilight of the room with the silver
Exultance of her voice, "My brother, can you feel how happy I am but how far off too?
If I have done wrong it has turned good to me, I could almost be sorry that I have to die now
Out of such freedom; if I were standing back of the evening crimson on a mountain in Asia
All the fool shames you can whip up into a filth of words would not be farther off me,
Nor any fear of anything, if I stood in the evening star and saw this dusty dime's worth
A dot of light, dropped up the star-gleam. Poor brother, poor brother, you played the fool too
But not enough, it is not enough to taste delight and passion and disgust and loathing
And agony, you have to be wide alive, 'an open mouth' you said, all the while, to reach this heaven
You'll never grow up to. Though it's possible if I'd let you go asoldiering, there on the dunghills

Of death and fire . . . ah, you'd taste nothing even there but
the officers' orders, beef and brandy,
And the tired bodies of a few black-eyed French dance-
girls: it is better for you
To be lost here than there." "You are up in the evening
star," he said, "you can't feel this," flat-handed
Striking her cheek, "you are up on a mountain in Asia, who
made you believe that you could keep me
Or let me go? I am going to-morrow, to-night I set the
house in order." "There is nothing now
You can be sorry for," she answered, "not even this, it is out
of the count, the cup ran over
Yesterday." He turned and left the room, the foolish tune
of the spurs tinkled
Hallway and stair. Tamar, handling the fiery spot upon her
cheek smiled in the darkness.
Feeling so sure of the end. "Night after night he has ridden
to the granite at the rivermouth
And missed my light, to-night he will see it, the Lobos star
he called it, and look and look to be sure
It is not a ship's light nor a star's, there in the south, then
he will come, and my three lovers
Under one roof."

VII

Lee Cauldwell felt his way in the dark among the cypress
trees, and turning
At the stable-door he saw the evening star, he felt for the
lantern
Hung on the bent nail to the right of the door,
Lighted it, and in the sweet hay-dusty darkness
Found the black quilt that hung beside the saddle
And seemed a living snake in the hand, then he opened

A locker full of hunter's gear and tumbled
Leather and iron to the floor for an old sheath-knife
Under all the rest; he took the knife and whip
And Tamar in the dark of the westward bedroom heard him
Tinkle on the stair and jingle in the hall, slow steps
Moving to hers, the room that had been her room
Before this illness; she felt him as if she had been there
Lighting her lamp and setting it on the sill,
Then felt him look about the little room and feel it
Breathing and warm with her once habitancy
And the hours of hers and his there, and soften almost
To childish tears at trifles on the wall;
And then he would look at the bed and stiffen
In a brittle rage, feel the thrust under-lip
Virtuous, an outcrop of morality in him
To grow ridiculous and wish to be cruel,
And so return to her. Hastily, without light,
She redded up some of the room's untidiness,
Thrust into the stove the folds of bandage-cloth,
Straightened the bed a little, and laying aside
The loose blue robe lay down in the bed to await him,
Who, throwing open the door, "Tamar: I've got no right
To put my hands into your life, I see
That each of us lives only a little while
And must do what he can with it: so, I'm going
To-night; I'd nearly worked myself to the act
Of some new foolishness: are you there, Tamar?
The lamp?" He struck a match and saw her eyes
Shine on him from the pillow and when the lamp
Was lighted he began again: "It's all such foolishness.
Well, you and I are done. I set your lamp for a signal on
the sill,
I'll take it away or help you to that room,

Whichever you like. That'll be my last hand in the game.
It won't take me ten minutes to pack and go, my plan's
Not to risk losing temper and have half-decent
Thoughts of you while I'm gone, and you of me, Tamar."
She lay too quietly and the shining eyes
Seemed not to hide amusement, he waited for her
To acknowledge not in direct words perhaps
His generosity, but she silent, "Well, shall I leave the lamp?"
He said, not all so kindly, and Tamar, "I've no one else
If you are going. But if you'd stay I wouldn't
Touch you again, ever. Agh, you can't wait
To get to France to crawl into strange beds,
But Monterey to-night. You—what a beast.
You like them dirty." He said, "You're a fool, Tamar.
Well, so I'll leave the lamp. Good-by, Tamar."
"You said you'd help me down the hall." "Yes, even that.
What must I do, carry you?" "Is the bed together?
See whether there are sheets and covers on it."
He went, and returned icy-pale. "It hasn't been changed
Since I smelled fire and ran into the room
Six or eight days ago. The cupboard door-frame
Is all charcoal. By God, Tamar,
If I believed he'd done it—who is he, Andrews?—
You and your lies have made a horror in the house.
What, shall I go, shall I go?" "Me? who made *me*
Believe that I could keep you or let you go,
Didn't you say?" "You still believe it," he answered,
Doubling his fists to hold in anger, the passionate need
Of striking her like a torrent in his throat,
"Believe it, fool." "Poor brother. You will never see France,
Never wear uniform nor learn how to fasten
A bayonet to a gun-barrel." "Come. Stop talking.
Get up, come to your room." "Carry me," she answered.

“Though I’m not really much too tired to walk.
You used to like me.” “Well, to get done and be gone,”
He said, bending above her, she enlaced his neck
Softly and strongly and raised her knees to let
His arm slip under them, he like a man stung by a serpent
Felt weakness and then rage, panted to lift her
And staggered in the doorway and in the dark hallway
Grew dizzy, and difficultly went on and groaning
Dropped her on the bed in her own room, she did not move
To cover herself, then he drawing his palm
Across his forehead found it streaming wet
And said, “You whore, you whore, you whore. Well, you
shall have it,
You’ve earned it,” and he twisted himself to the little table
And took the whip, the oiled black supple quirt,
Loaded at the handle, that seemed a living snake in the
hand,
And felt the exasperate force of his whole baffled
And blindfold life flow sideways into the shoulder
Swinging it, and half repenting while it dropped
Sickened to see the beautiful bare white
Blemishless body writhe under it before it fell,
The loins pressed into the bed, the breast and head
Twisting erect, and at the noise of the stroke
He made a hoarse cry in his throat but she
Took it silently, and lay still afterward,
Her head so stricken backward that the neck
Seemed strained to breaking, the coppery pad of her hair
Crushed on the shoulder-blades, while that red snake-trail
Swelled visibly from the waist and flank down the left thigh.
“O God, God, God,” he groaned; and she, her whole body
Twitching on the white bed whispered between her teeth

"It was in the bargain," and from her bitten lip
A trickle of blood ran down to the pillow.

That one light in the room,
The lamp on the sill, did not turn redder for blood nor with
the whipstripe
But shone serene and innocent up the northward night, writ-
ing a long pale-golden track
In the river's arm of sea, and beyond the river's mouth
where the old lion's teeth of blunted granite
Crop out of the headland young Will Andrews kissed it
with his eyes, rode south and crossed the river's
Late-summer sand-lock. Figures of fire moved in the hills
on the left, the pasture-fires and brush-fires
Men kindle before rain, on a southerly wind the smell of the
smoke reached him, the sea on his right
Breathed; when he skirted the darkness of the gum-tree
grove at San Jose creek-mouth he remembered
Verdugo killed there; Sylvia Vierra and her man had lived
in the little white-washed farm-hut
Under the surf-reverberant blue-gums; two years ago they
had had much wine in the house, their friend
Verdugo came avisting, he being drunk on the raw plenty
of wine they thought abused
Nine-year-old Mary, Sylvia's daughter, they struck him from
behind and when he was down unmanned him
With the kitchen knife, then plotted drunkenly—for he
seemed to be dead—where to dispose the body.
That evening Tamar Cauldwell riding her white pony along
the coast-road saw a great bonfire
Periling the gum-tree grove, and riding under the smoke
met evil odors, turning in there

Saw by the firelight a man's feet hang out of the fire; then
Tamar never having suffered
Fear in her life, knocked at the hut's door and unanswered
entered, and found the Vierras asleep
Steaming away their wine, but little Mary weeping. She had
taken the child and ridden homeward.
Young Andrews thinking of that idyll of the country gulped
at the smoke from the hills and tethered
His horse in the hiding of a clump of pines, and climbed the
line-fence.

Turning a cypress thicket
He saw a figure sway in the starlight, and stood still, breath-
less. A woman: Tamar? Not Tamar:
No one he knew: it faced the east gables of the house and
seemed twisting its hands and suddenly
Flung up both arms to its face and passed out of the patch
of starlight. The boy, troubled and cautious,
Turned the other way and circling to the south face of the
house peered from behind the buttressed
Base of a seventy-year-old trunk that yellow light on the
other side clothed, and he saw
A lamp on the table and three people sitting by it; the old
man, stiff-jointed as a corpse,
Grotesquely erect, and old Aunt Stella her lips continually
in motion, and old Jinny
Cross-legg'd having drawn up her ankles into her chair, nod-
ding asleep. At length Aunt Stella
Ceased talking, none of the three stirred. Young Andrews
backed into the wood and warily finishing
His circuit stood in the darkness under Tamar's window.
The strong young tree to help him to it
Still wore on its boughs her lamplight, then he climbed and
set his hands on the sill, his feet on the ledge

Under it, and Tamar came to the window and took up the lamp to let him enter. Her face
White in the yellow lamp's glow, with sharp shadows under the eyes and a high look of joy
He had never seen there frightened him, and she said, "I have been sick, you know." "I heard," he answered, "O Tamar, I have been lonely. We must let them know, we can't go on, my place is with you
When you most need me." "We will tell them to-night," she said, and kissed his mouth and called, "Lee, Lee, Come. He has come." "What? Now," he said. "I have told Lee. I was sick, he was sorry for me, he is going
To camp to-morrow, he wants to see you and say good-by." Lee entered while she spoke and quietly
Held out his hand and Andrews took it. "Talk to each other," Tamar said, "I am very tired
And must lie down." Lee muttered, "She's been awfully sick, it scared us, you were lucky, Bill Andrews, Not to be here." "I didn't think so," he answered, "what was it, Lee?" "Well, it's all over," Lee said, Shifting his feet, "I'm off to-morrow. I'm glad we're friends to say good-by. Be good to her, won't you."
And the other, "O God knows I will. All I can do. But of course . . . Lee . . . if they need me
She knows I won't beg off because I'm . . . married . . . maybe I'll see you over there." "O," said Tamar Laughing, "you too?" and she sat up on the bed saying, "Lee: go and call father if he's able.
We ought to tell him, he ought to meet my—husband." "I'll see if he can," Lee answered, "he was unwell
To-day, and if he's in bed . . ." He left the room, then Tamar: "Look. Bring the lamp. What Lee did to me."

She opened the blue robe and bared her flank and thigh
showing the long whip-mark. "I have a story.
You must see this to believe it." He turned giddy, the sweet
slenderness
Dazzling him, and the lamp shook in his hand, for the sharp
spasm of physical pain one feels
At sight of a wound shot up his entrails. That long welt of
red on the tender flesh, the blood-flecks
And tortured broken little channels of blood crossing it.
"Tamar, Tamar!" "Put down the lamp,
And when they come I'll tell you the story." "What shall I
do?" "Why, nothing, nothing. Poor boy," she said,
Pityingly, "I think you are too glad of your life to have come
Into this house, you are not hard enough, you are like my
mother, only stone or fire
Should marry into this house." Then he bewildered looking
at the blackened door-frame, "Why, yes,"
Laughed Tamar, "it is here, it has been here, the bride-
groom's here already. O Will, I have suffered . . .
Things I daren't tell." "What do you mean, Tamar?" "Noth-
ing, I mustn't tell you, you are too high-tempered,
You would do something. Dear, there are things so wicked
that nothing you can do can make them better,
So horrible now they are done that even to touch or try to
mend or punish them is only to widen
Horror: like poking at a corpse in a pool. And father's old
and helpless." "Your father, Tamar?"
"And not to blame. I think he hardly even knew what
Lee—" "Lee?" "This much I'll tell you,
You have to know it . . . our love, your love and mine, had
. . . fruit, would have been fruitful, we were going to have
A child, and I was happy and frightened, and it is dead. O
God, O God, O God, I wish

I too had been born too soon and died with the eyes un-
opened, not a cry, darkness, darkness,
And to be hidden away. They did it to me; with other
abuse, worse violence." Meanwhile Lee Cauldwell
Finding his father with the two old women in the room
down stairs, "Father," he said,
"Tamar was asking for you . . ." and Helen's voice through
old Aunt Stella answered, "She has enough,
Tell her she has enough." "Aunt Stella," he said, "how long
will you keep it up? Our trouble's clearing,
Let your ghosts be." "She has you and the other," she an-
swered, "let me have this one. Are we buzzards to quarrel
Over you dead, we ghosts?" Then Lee turning his shoulder
at her, "You must come up, father.
Do you remember the Andrews' place that's up the valley?
Young Andrews is up-stairs with Tamar,
He wants to marry her. You know I have to go away to-
morrow, remember? and I'll go happier
To leave her . . . taken care of. So you'll see him, father?"
"Who is it?" asked the old man. "The bridegroom,"
Said Helen's voice, "a bridegroom for your Tamar, and the
priest will be fire and blood the witness,
And they will live together in a house where the mice are
moles." "Why do you plague me," he answered
Plaintively, and Lee: "Come, father," and he lifting his
face, "I have prayed to the hills to come and cover me,
We are on the drop-off cliff of the world and dare not meet
Him, I with two days to live, even I
Shall watch the ocean boiling and the sea curl up like paper
in a fire and the dry bed
Crack to the bottom: I have good news for her, I will see
her." "And I to tell her she may take

Two but not three," said Helen. "Stay here, stay here, be quiet," Lee answered angrily, "can I take up The whole menagerie, raving?" He turned in the door and heard his father move behind him and said, "If you come up, be quiet," and at the door up-stairs, "Father is tired and sick, he'll only Speak to you, Andrews, and must go to bed; he's worried about my going away to-morrow. This is Bill Andrews, father." And Tamar coming to the door, "Let him come in, it's dark here, No, bring him in. Father, come in. What, shall the men that made your war suck up their millions, Not I my three?" Then Andrews: "If Tamar is well enough to go to-night I will take her to-night. You will be well when you are out of this house." "You hate it still," said Tamar. "He hates the house," She said to Lee, leading his eyes with the significance in hers to the blackened door-frame, "Well, I will go with you to-morrow." And Lee, "Listen, Will Andrews, I heard from somebody You know who set the fire here." "No, not that," he answered, "but I know other worse things That have been done here." "Fire, fire," moaned the old man, "the fire of the Lord coming in judgment. Tamar, It is well with us, be happy, he won't torture the wicked, He will rub them out and suddenly With instant fire. We shall be nothing." "Come, Tamar," Andrews cried, "to-night. I daren't leave you." "For fear I ask her," said Lee. "You did it, then. You set the fire." "No, that's too idiot A lie to answer," he said, "what do I know about your fires? I know something Worse than arson. And saw the horrible new scar of a whip

Not to be paid—this way!" He felt the jerk of his arm
 striking
 And his fist hitting the sharp edge of the jawbone, but yet
 When Lee staggered and closed in with a groan,
 Clutching him, fumbling for his throat, Will thought "What
 a fool
 To make a nasty show of us before Tamar
 And the others, why does he want to fight?" and indignantly
 Pushed him off and struck twice, both fists, Lee dropped
 And scrambled on hands and knees by the little table.
 Then the old man cried, "We shall be nothing, nothing.
 O but that's frightful."
 And Will turning to Tamar saw such hatred
 Wrinkle her face he felt a horrible surge
 Of nausea in him, then with bare teeth she smiled at him
 And he believed the hate was for her brother
 And said, "Ah Tamar, come." Meanwhile the Helen
 That spoke out of the lungs and ran in the nerves
 Of old Aunt Stella caught the old man David Cauldwell
 By the loose flapping sleeve and the lean arm,
 Saying in a clotted amorous voice, "Come, David,
 My brother, my lover, O honey come, she has no eyes for
 you, she feasts on young men. But you to me, to me,
 Are as beautiful as when we dared
 Desperate pleasure, naked, ages ago,
 In the room and by the sea." "Father," said Tamar,
 "It is only an hour to the end, whom do you want
 To-night? Stay here by me." "I was hunting for some-
 thing," said Lee Cauldwell,
 "Here it is, here it is," and had the sheath-knife bared
 And struck up from the floor, rising, the blade
 Ripped cloth and skin along his enemy's belly
 And the leather belt catching it deflected the point

Into the bowels, Andrews coughed and fell backward
And Lee falling across him stabbed at his throat
But struck too high and opened the right cheek,
The knife scraping on bone and teeth, then Tamar
In a sea-gull voice, "I dreamed it in his face,
I dreamed a T cut in his face—" "You and your dreams
Have done for us," Lee groaned answer. "Akh, all blood,
blood.
What did you say to make him hit me?"

Though it is not thought
That the dead intervene between the minds
And deeds of the living, that they are witnesses,
If anything of their spirits with any memory
Survive and not in prison, would seem as likely
As that an exile should look longingly home:
And the mist-face of that mother at the window
Wavering was but a witness, could but watch,
Neither prevent nor cause: no doubt there are many
Such watchers in the world: the same whom Andrews,
Stepping like a thief among the cypress clumps an hour
before
Saw twist her hands and suddenly fling up both vaporous
arms and sway out of the starlight,
She now was watching at the down-stairs window
Old Jinny alone in the room, and saw, as the dead see, the
thoughts
More clearly than the cloth and skin; the child mind
In that old flesh gathered home on itself
In coils, laboring to warm a memory,
And worked on by an effluence, petulantly pushing away
The easier memories of its open time
Forty years back, power flowing from someone in that house

Belting it in, pressing it to its labor,
Making it shape in itself the memory of to-day's
Vision, the watcher saw it, how could she know it
Or know from whence? a girl naked, no, wrapped in fire,
Filmed in white sheets of fire. "Why, I'm like God,"
Old Jinny had said, "I see through walls," a girl
Naked though clothed in fire, and under the arms
Naked, no hair,—“Ah to be like her, to be like her, probably
Cloth, hair, burned off”; displaying herself before a wild old
man

Who appeared part of the joy: “Ah, to be like her,
Fire is so sweet, they never let me play with it,
No one loves Jinny, wouldn't fire be a father
And hold her in his arms? Fire is so sweet,”
She hovered the hot lamp, “sweet fire, sweet light,”
She held a rag of paper above it, “O dear, dear fire,
Come and kiss Jinny, no one's looking,
Jinny's alone. Dear star, dear light, O lovely fire
Won't you come out, why is it turning black,
Ah come, Ah come, hug Jinny.” The hungry beautiful bird
Hopped from its bird-cage to her. “I've got my star
Ah love, Ah love, and here's more paper
And a little of Jinny's dress, love, lovely light,
Jinny so loves you, Jinny's baby, Jinny's baby,
O,” she screamed, “Oo, Oo, Oo,” and ran to the window,
folded

In a terrible wreath, and at her side the curtains
Danced into flame, and over her head; the gasp
That followed on a cry drew down a sword
Of flame to her lungs, pain ceased, and thinking “Father”
She dropped herself into the arms of the fire,
Huddling under the sill, and her spirit unprisoned
Filled all the room and felt a nuptial joy

In mixing with the bright and eager flame.
While from that blackened morsel on the floor
Fire spread to the wall and gnawed it through, and the
window-glass
Crackling and tinkling a rush of south wind fed
The eagerness in the house. They heard up-stairs
That brutal arch of crying, the quick crescendo,
The long drop and the following moan, Will Andrews
Struggled to rise and like a gopher-snake that a child
Has mashed the head of with a stone, he waggled
The blood-clot of his head over the floor
Gulping, "You devils, you devils." Lee would have run
down

But Tamar clung to him, the old man on his knees
Muttered to God, and old Aunt Stella
In no voice but her own screamed, screamed. Then fire
Was heard roaring, the door leaked threads of smoke,
Lee caught up Tamar in his arms and turned
To the window, the cypress-ladder, but his first step,
Blind, with the burden in his arms, the smoke in his eyes,
Trampled his murdered man on the floor who turning
Caught the other ankle and Lee went down and Tamar
So lovingly wound him that he could not rise
Till the house was full of its bright death; then Tamar:
"I will not let you take me. Go if you want."
He answered, "You devil, shall I go?" "You wouldn't stay!
Think of your black-eyed French girls." "We are on the
edge of it," he answered,
"Tamar, be decent for a minute." "I have my three lovers
Here in one room, none of them will go out,
How can I help being happy? This old man
Has prayed the end of the world onto us all,

And which of you leaves me?" Then the old man: "O what
mountain,
What mountain, what mountain?" And Lee, "Father. The
window
We'll follow you." But he kneeling would not rise,
While the house moved and the floor sagged to the south
And old Aunt Stella through the opening door
Ran into the red and black, and did not scream
Any more; then Tamar: "Did you think you would go
Laughing through France?" And the old man, "Fierce,
fierce light,
Have pity, Christ have pity, Christ have pity, Christ have
pity,
Christ have pity,
Christ have pity . . ."
And Tamar with her back to the window embraced
Her brother, who struggled toward it, but the floor
Turned like a wheel.

Grass grows where the flame flowered;
A hollowed lawn strewn with a few black stones
And the brick of broken chimneys; all about there
The old trees, some of them scarred with fire, endure the
sea wind.

GALE IN APRIL

Intense and terrible beauty, how has our race with the frail
naked nerves,
So little a craft swum down from its far launching?
Why now, only because the northwest blows and the headed
grass billows,
Great seas jaggng the west and on the granite
Blanching, the vessel is brimmed, this dancing play of the
world is too much passion.
A gale in April so overfilling the spirit,
Though his ribs were thick as the earth's, arches of moun-
tain, how shall one dare to live,
Though his blood were like the earth's rivers and his flesh
iron,
How shall one dare to live? One is born strong, how do the
weak endure it?
The strong lean upon death as on a rock,
After eighty years there is shelter and the naked nerves shall
be covered with deep quietness,
O beauty of things go on, go on, O torture
Of intense joy I have lasted out my time, I have thanked
God and finished,
Roots of millennial trees fold me in the darkness,
Northwest wind shake their tops, not to the root, not to the
root, I have passed
From beauty to the other beauty, peace, the night splendor.

MAL PASO BRIDGE

I

Under the lovely Santa Lucian hills
Between the steep-up slopes and storm-piled sea's
Green turbulence I rode northward, beneath
Armies of cloud on the headlands. Garapatas
Passed, over Soberanes Canyon hung
A Sierran condor on spread sails, the storm
Moved him not, the massed body of heaven above him
Moved and he solitary in the great wind
That slighter wings could not endure abode.
Under Mal Paso bridge the long-maned sea-waves
Beat up into the stream, on the other bank
A woman with a little child was standing,
Her daughter three years old, the woman's face
Though it seemed white against the storm was brown,
Her body and face I thought were beautiful,
Her eyes and hair were stormier than the cloud,
I trembled when she turned her eyes upon me.
Turbulent loveliness did you know then,
Or only a fortnight later the full storm
Of male desire? You are the shallow creek-mouth
The surf of all my seas converged upon.
Were I that mountain vulture, solitary
And unmoved under the rush of monstrous heavens,
You would have been the arrow and brought me down.
But when I bought you with a smile and whispers
And secret gifts of wine then the arrow was blunted.

2

This is the year when young men cannot guess
 From night to night what bed they'll sleep in.
 But I in yours dark beauty of new desire,
 Yours under Santa Lucian hills
 Near the rough water; but beyond that nor moon
 Nor guess candles the remnant nights.
 Therefore I swore to drink wine while I could,
 Love where I pleased, and feed my eyes
 With Santa Lucian sea-beauty, and moreover
 To shear the rhyme-tassels from verse.

3

No doubt God kept the cows away
 To let the grass grow long and dry
 Under the white oak up the canyon.

And frightened with a noise of dogs
 Those moonlighters the misty deer,
 He made the bed, he kept it sacred.

O keep it hidden and holy still,
 Let nothing, bird nor beast nor man,
 Touch our joy's chamber under the oaktree.

4

Iron is the world's want now,
 The desire of the nation's adventurous iron
 Running ahead in the front of the violence,
 And war-making steel the hard-visaged adventurer.

Let us give two nights to love
 And one to the beautiful goodness of wine,

Stars we will gather you, hills you shall dance with us
To meet the grave brows of the morning high-heartedly.

5

The war-cruisers well-steerable and steel-belted
Traversing the prone sea
From eloquent round mouths in their mailed towers
Profess a metal language
Beyond the remote horizon ponderously
Significant; the broad storm-cloud
Can kill far off with hazardous quick-flaming
And crooked spears; the Sierras
Have white and roaring lances that they fling
When rose-awakening May
Fondles them, blue-eyed temptress; but I that walk
Ill-armed this dangerous earth
Have only verse, a light weapon, that leaves
In the wound seeds of live fire.

6

In dream I hunted the latest vessel of the old desire
Across an ancient foreign city
Through coiling streets, a city at war, for every moment
Enemy fire and metal death
Dropped messages from the doubtful twilight; still I sought,
But found not whom I sought, she eluded
Desire and death also. I stood before the sculptured
Gateway of an old dingy house.
My father who is dead stood in the door and beckoned,
And on the granite of the lintel
A serpent dragged its polished body, the color of stone.
... It will be years before I can enter.

Dark pearl, rose of the hills, star of the sea,
 Dark star, angel of hell, I am mad for your body,
 I am sick for the smell of your hair, I have burning for
 heart

And the sun for my hatred, and you.
 Slim deer grazing at night knew that you lied.
 Gray gulls gossip about us, they scream in the fountains
 Of the surf, "He believed in her beauty, he is fooled like a
 boy
 Who will spaniel a smile and a braid."

White bird beating between the hilltops
 Rises the dawn at the head of the valley,
 The hush of the stars.
 The redwoods shake their columns of shadow,
 Deep in darkness whisper the waters
 An adorable word.
 Through the cool calm and the secret twilight
 Silver-foreheaded, saintly, a maiden,
 Wonderfully move
 Light, and the waters nightlong wakeful
 Whenever we listened, and the sacred hilltops
 Whitening in heaven.

THE COAST-RANGE CHRIST

I

Peace O'Farrell, the Carmel farmer's wife, was sorrowful
day and night,
Found no joy in being young and could have wished the
yellow hair white.
What is youth for but to spill it with joy at the altar-foot
of life?
What right has a wild old man in the useless beauty of a
young wife?
David Carrow forded the river, a youth with wide and simple
eyes,
To distinguish the strained face, pools in a rock reflecting
skies.
"Are you looking for your father's horses, David, that strayed
this way?
Jamie sicked the collie on them to stop them nosing the
stacked hay.
They ran up and crossed the bridge, they'll be at the gate
when you get home.
David, you might stay and talk to me for a minute since
you've come.
I'm so lonely these days, Jamie hates me, I'll leave him when
I can.
Christian David, tell me would that be wicked?" "You
mustn't rob a man."

"Rob his hayfield of a squirrel, it's likely he'd mind, he's
tired of me now.

Rob his orchard of a little ripe apple he leaves to rot on the
bough."

"Peace, I'm sorry," David said. Peace watched the muscles
in his cheek

Work, for he felt ashamed; she flung restraint to the wind
thinking him weak.

David drew from her hot arms but the hot soft kiss was like
a devil

Following him across the shoal though he prayed to be de-
livered from evil;

Though he'd harder cattle to herd, young men were being
conscripted now

Up to the rage of nations, not for a coward's reason he dared
not go;

Dreamer of mystical brotherhood he had built to music a
mountain of faith

Over desperate Golgotha rock and found a star to follow to
death.

II

Walking in his father's field when shadows grew long and
leaned toward night

David felt the law and prison reach out for him, he prayed
for a light.

Waking in his bed when shadows began to flock to the
waterside

David fancied men were come to take him and prayed to
Christ his guide.

"Lord our love and savior lead me, make me worthy to
suffer like you

At men's hands and in their walls, it will be hard, it is little
to do.
But last night when I was walking in the field, and in the
night
While I slept, a voice came and a dream Lord, so I cry for a
light.
For it said to hide in the hills, I thought that it was your
voice, Dear.
But to hide seems wrong, I am ready to suffer now, I cannot
see clear.
Then my dream, I stood in the hills, in the deep woods of
the hills, I saw
You, Dear, walking on Potrero Hill and wept with wonder
and awe."
David prayed, his own soul crying to him to escape to the
hills and hide.
Secretly enthroned his own soul answered the prayer, that
God his guide.

III

Where the Carmel River leans upon its sand-bar in love
with the waves,
And the old Franciscan churchyard feels the wild gourd
finger its graves
While the weed-roots eat the chalk-stone walls, the O'Far-
rell farmlands lay.
All the country is shot with the endless treasure-stories of
Monterey.
Tales of the lost Spanish mine the Indians know of up in
the hill,
Where their forefathers were whipped like cattle, they keep
the secret still.

Stories of brigands' loot and priests' hoards buried between
a night and a day;
Tales of tall ships bulging with sterling silver and mutiny
beached in the bay.
Tales that focussed on O'Farrell's own farmland, the core of
the coast domain
Granted the mendicants of St. Francis by the majesty of
Spain.
In O'Farrell's potato-field the plow-iron yielded convert
bones,
Though his mole-plow never had cut to treasure, but the
farmer had once
Saved a grizzled Indian's life when the river was up and his
horse went down,
Hauled him through the tawny freshet tearing the alders
tempest-blown.
With no word of thanks the old man went dripping up hill
and disappeared;
Ten days later he returned and squatted all day in the stable
yard,
Slept in the loft straw at night and in the morning said he'd
bid
Silver for life: when the priests were hunted out of the Mis-
sion church they hid
Deep their hoard, O'Farrell dig here and find old silver as
cheap as salt,
Candlesticks and cups and ingots rocked-in at night in the
rich vault.
No, he had better work to mind, the winter plows and the
summer reaping;
But years after, an autumn evening while he lay between
waking and sleeping

Came a voice on the valley-wind "O'Farrell, dig here." He
smiled and slept.
In a dream his mother came, her hair was earthy and wet
and she wept.
There was silver at her throat, earth-tarnished now for
thirty years.
When he waked he thought it wise to dig, he was so moved
by her tears.
At twelve feet he tapped a tunnel underground but it led to
nothing.
Nearer to the river he sunk another shaft, with longing and
loathing.
Not for need of the white metal, the plows were turning up
gold that year,
He was longing to withdraw from concealment . . . to lift
into the air . . .
Something . . . that white child of the earth . . . to violate
the secrets of earth.
Said he was digging a new well, blasphemed when water
bubbled forth.
Toiled with long-forgotten hankering, baby fingers never at
rest
Fumbling for a silver trinket that used to swing in the
mother's breast.
Sapping at the man's grown nerves the helpless baby's fear
and desire,
Like a crystal fault in granite, unseen till the lintel cracks,
or a fire
Sown in harbor in a ship's hold where it smoulders seven
days
With no smoke and then the lonely midmost ocean beholds
the blaze.

Mother's love eclipsed the dues of the living, itself in its
darkness hid,
Obscure moon of the dead; the secret child within him ruled
what he did.
Tore at his sleep and tortured him, and let his hired Swiss
run the farm
While he credited crazy symbols, for omens flock as the vul-
tures swarm
Over carrion, to shadow the shaky-nerved.... Peace also
had singular dreams,
Swam in a pool of darting serpents, or played in a novel-
ist's chariot-games,
Under thousands of men's eyes round the high stone altars
and theater-courses,
Scaled with plates of blazing silver, guiding a galloping
hurricane of horses.

IV

Hicks, the sheriff's man, drove up to the door and switched
off his machine.
"How do you do, Mrs. O'Farrell?" "Why, Sherman Hicks,
is it you? Come in."
"Just on business, Peace. We used to think there was better
than that between us.
Have you seen Dave Carrow around, they want him over
there in Salinas."
"David—what do you want David for?" "The draft-board
wants him, Peace.
Called him and he didn't show up, his people don't know
where he is,
Least they say they don't." "I don't know either, I haven't
seen him in weeks.

David a coward and slacker, I hope you catch him." "Likely we will," said Hicks.
"I was talking to Walt Vogel, he says he's watched the old woman crawl
Up the hillside when the sun went down with a bundle wrapped in a shawl."
"Sanctified young puppy," said Peace, "that yellow streak is certain to show.
Once he tried to kiss me, the crazy boy; I never liked him though;
Christian David." "Do boys often try?" "Jamie's away so much,
Digging his new wells—No! Sherman." "God, Peace, you're a sweet girl to touch."
"Sherman, I'm half crazy myself, but let it be, it's over now. Hope you catch your slacker, if I hear about him I'll let you know."

V

Peace dreamed marvelously all night and Carmel Mission the desolate church
Grown much larger and more lovely and belted with a shining porch
Of enormous pillars blazed with rosy light, the whole beauty was hers,
All her blood went wild to feel the aisles fill up with worshipers.
Indians and all sorts of men, and women with sheer silk bridal veils,
Bold vaqueros with broad spurs and bandit captains out of old tales.
Soldiers too, thousands of soldiers, bayonet-carriers, beautiful killers,

Tall Americans and short Frenchmen shouldering the
crowd in the shadow of the pillars.
First the worshipers adored the small star-window over the
door,
While the door moved eagerly wide for the entrance of mul-
titudes more and more.
Then the sweet silver and terrible bells rang out wild wel-
come and swayed the domed steeple,
While the sucking wings of the doorway pulsed and quiv-
ered for the entrance of people.
Next the multitude adored the crucifix over the high stone
altar,
There a serpent for Christ was hanging, the whole crowd
worshiped and did not falter.
Wild choirs of boys' voices pealed, in unison all the roof-
tiles rang,
All the rafters gave a silver noise and all the columns sang.
Sculptured saints beneath the altar began to sing for Peace
and to call.
She—her vestment silks were torn and she would be shamed
before them all.
Her the crowd awaited, now it was crying her name, it
howled like a wolf,
Horrible fears ran blind through her body, a luxury of
shame, what hiding, what gulf?
Suddenly out of a smell of ferns and streams, out of the
quiet hill-mist,
David came and clasped her shoulder, "Come with me
Peace, we will see Christ."
Though her body was naked he did not see nor mind, her
mouth was chill
With sweet water and canyon streams, and death it seemed,
in the sleep of the hill.

When the gates of the east were widened, the wan stars
gathered home their gleams,
Golden-haired the gorgeous day came out of the valley to
kill dreams.

VI

Peace had left the work to the servant after the noon meal
was done,
When the hateful hour had passed and her husband and the
men were gone.
Peace went up to her own room and watched from the
windows west and south
Sea-gulls weave a windy storm-dance over the shore at the
Carmel mouth.
Gulls by thousands flying the south wind, two swarms like
columns slender and far
Towering from the Carmel sand-beach and spiring above
the Carmel bar.
Columns curving on the wind and rootless near the water;
and higher
Up the beautiful coast-range hills were columns of smoke
and crescents of fire.
Where the ranchers fired their hill-fields, they felt the hurry
of wind from the south,
Hoped the waited rain would come, they were clearing the
pastures for new growth.
All the hills were glassy clear, the yellow slopes and the
trees beyond
Like a picture under glass or like the moss in a quiet pond.
Peace began to tremble greatly, and found in a drawer, done
in old cloth,
Field-glasses, and focused them to her eyes and felt the
heights of the south.

Homesick for the forest, and full of hatred she thought for
David, turning
To the quiet slopes on the right, away from the ridge where
fires were burning.
Searching pines and bushes of sage and lupine, the deer-
paths and rabbit-runs,
Cattle-paths, and the dim wheel-tracks up from Carrow's
farm, and once
While she watched a shadow a man's form passed in the
forest, the glasses shaking
Spilt the vision, her arms and eyes were so weary and all her
body was aching.
But at sundown she saw a woman, and knew it was David's
mother, steal
Up the cow-path with a bundle wrapped in a shawl, and up
the hill.
Hands shook and breath shortened again, the woman
wound back and forth from sight,
Stood by a tree, returned without the bundle through the
gathering night.
"Ah, my Christian Davie, blue-eyed forest coyote, caught I
say, caught.
Poor old mother thinking her boy hungry, it's more than
food you've brought.
Better have left him poison mother, a traitor and coward,
far better have touched
Twenty-two years ago the heavy nipple with strychnine
when the young lips clutched.
Now he'll rot his shame in prison." Peace, laughing and
laying the glasses down,
Called up Sherman Hicks, the sheriff's deputy, on the tele-
phone;

Told him what she'd seen, "And you," she said, "drive up by the valley road,
Leave your car and climb the ridge, we'll catch our fox when he comes for his food.
You must climb the ridge, I'll call one of the farmhands and ride by the west,
David will be caught between us before we meet on the hill crest.
There's no underbrush to hide in, only a few pines standing alone.
Quietly Sherman, very quietly. No lights, we'll have the full of the moon."
Hicks was laughing to himself to find so eager a volunteer.
"Better let me walk in the hills and you be safe in bed, my dear.
Ain't good sense for a pretty woman to poke about in the woods at night.
There's a south wind blowing up clouds and there'll be precious little light,
Peace, from that full moon of yours to see with an hour or so.
Then, besides, your husband mightn't like it." "No," answered Peace, "I'll go.
Better to ride in the dark hills than dream of the horrors all night long.
Trust me to take care of myself, I'll take my automatic along."
Peace went out and found her husband fetching a lantern from the shed.
"Jamie, won't you come with me, I've got to go for a ride," Peace said.
"Going to help the sheriff's deputy catch a slacker up in the wood.

David Carrow's dodging the draft, I saw his mother taking him food.

I can help, it's war-time, Jamie, each one of us must help as we're able."

But he answered, "I've got to fetch another lantern out of the stable.

For I'm going to work all night, it'll rain before to-morrow night.

There's a south wind blowing up rain, I've got to work by lantern light.

Rain will come, the river'll flood, the rain will wash the dirt like salt,

But I've struck the second tunnel running down to the rich vault.

I've been digging in a dirt of dead men's bones for seven or eight weeks,

Sunk a shaft and run a drift, and you can ride with Sherman Hicks.

Ride and be damned, it's nothing to me." "But, Jamie dear, if you won't come

Let me have George or Johnny or Frank to see me safe and bring me home."

"No, I'll need their help to cut the sand-bar, you can't have one of the men,

For I'll want them all in the morning if the floodwaters begin."

VII

On the hills were crescents of fire that crackled and spurted blood-red light,

Over the hills the patient moon was spilling silver down the night.

Peace rode high in the pines and James her husband dug his
pit in the earth,
Burning to rake old riches from concealment and bring the
earth's child to birth.
Amorously piercing the impure depth, the prone breast
lulled by the night.
Plowing a channel for his dream with shovel and pick by
lantern light.
Peace rode up in the open pinewood, clouds were pushed up
over the moon,
Patches of light, patches of dark, on the open hill slope
plunging and strewn.
In a patch of shadow her pony shied, a boy said tender-
voiced:
"I was waiting for you up here, come with me, Peace, we
will see Christ."
"We'll see Sherman Hicks, the deputy-sheriff, that's the man
we must see.
David, you're a fool to have run away from the fighting;
and, David, from me.
When I kissed you on your mouth, have you forgotten,
David?" "Not yet.
But in jail I'll soon forget and here in the hills I'd soon
forget.
It was nothing, Peace. So you've come up to catch me?"
"How can I know?
But to own you body and soul. I can give you up, I can let
you go.
God, it's pleasant, David, to possess you; to own a man like
a horse.
This one moment you're all mine, I can give you up to
prison or worse,

I can set you free of the hills, dear, I can do better than let
you go,
Find you money and make you a way and over the border
to Mexico.
Choose, you'll kiss me, David?" "I'll do more, O Peace, you
homing dove,
Lovely and perfect messenger, come with me, Peace, we will
see love.
It was hurting here in my brain, in the nights I dreamed of
you alone,
When I ought to have dreamed of Jesus Christ the other
adorable one.
I was angry at you, Peace, for drawing me down from the
promised desire,
Now I see that God was at work and both of us faggots for
that fire:
Let your pony graze, come down the gulch with me, Peace,
till the men are gone.
God has sworn me promises. O Peace, your love and Christ's
are one."
"You would hurt me, David." "O we are going to the fire,
the fire of the world
Ending, heaven beginning, spirits set loose, the seas burned,
the stars hurled.
Love me, Peace. I love you. That is Christ. I love you, I love
you, Peace.
All the world is slipping to cinders about us and love is all
that there is,
Come, my Peace, come Peace." "Ah, but you'd hurt me,
David." "I will not touch
Even your hair's tip with my lips, I love you too much, I
love you too much."

Marvelous sorcery of the night, the splintered moon-gleams,
the south wind gushing,
Pines, the sky so near, the fires, the high withdrawal, the
south wind pushing.
Peace swung down from the saddle, "We both are crazy,
David. Come. You and I."
Down the gulch they lay in a shadow and heard the sheriff's
man go by.
Heard the horse puff, the man pause; and heard him catch
the horse, and stand still.
Heard the pumping of their blood and the south wind pouring
across the hill.
After enormous intervals the man called once or twice, the
south
Washed his voice down the dark slope. Peace carried
David's hand to her mouth.
Now the moon was gone, the hill-fold hid the fires, no stars,
no light.
Peace had whipped her arms around David's neck. The man
rode by in the night.
David wished to rise. "Hush, he'll comb all the hill, there's
no good way
But lie still and wait, against the sky he'd see us, black
against gray.
Sweetheart, rest on me," she said. "How can I rest, we have
Christ to find."
"Sweetheart, rest on me in this secret harbor out of the
beating wind."
"Peace, when you came up to catch me then you were not
betraying me." "Hush.
Where is Christ? but love grows here on the hill, wild, wild,
God's grape to crush.

Sent by God, you said I was. A wild grape, a wild gift in the
dark.
Storm to hide us. When dawn comes if you hate me kill me
at the first spark.”
Now the storm grew heavy with rain, the burdened south
wind let big drops fall.
Peace could feel her flesh move at their touch, her mind felt
nothing at all
Of the storm, but only a confused fire, her lips felt David’s
lips
In the sensuous gatherings of the wind and the night, in the
world’s eclipse.
Down below the big drops thudded on fresh earth, in the
valley below
Where that silver-covetous mole was burrowing by the
river’s flow
In his tunnel with his lanterns; and westward the horizontal
drift
Skimmed the ocean, pelting the waves sideways under the
weather’s lift.
Eastward where the greedy brush-fires bent under the buf-
feting wind
Hissed the rain, red steam poured up the night, the coals
blackened, went blind.
But far eastward under another rain there was metal rain-
ing too,
Fire and metal, and men laboring and fighting in a filth of
mud like glue.
Peace was pasturing in the rain on the little field of her
despair,
Eating the reckless heart of joy with lips like fire through
the loosened hair.

“David. Ah. Ah. Dearest. Kill me, kill me now; how can I live
All the coming years?” In a moment David prayed, “God,
God, forgive
Me this woman’s pitiful fool.” He moaned, he struck her
mouth and her throat’s
Curve, she screamed and ripped her pistol from its case and
fired three shots.
Up the hill came a cry in answer. Peace ran to the hoof-
beats. “Help, Sherman. Ride. Ride!
Sherman. Kill the beast. He dragged me from the saddle.
He struck me, he tried...”
“Which way did he run?” “Up there, up hill.” The man
spurred, the horse went down,
Winded from the slope, tripped in a gopher-burrow. “God
damn it, I’m thrown.”
He was cursing the rain and the horse, the hills, the dark-
ness, the hurt in his side.
Peace came and he grumbled, “Sorry, Peace. He’s out, no
good to ride,
Fetlock snapped, your pony. We can’t do more to-night.
I’ll take you home.
But I’ll catch that running devil, by God, if it takes till
kingdom come.”
“Sherman, you’re not hurt?” “No, did he hurt you, Peace?”
“He struck me.... No.
And I’m not going home, not till we get him, Sherman: I
say I won’t go.”
“O you’re plucky, Peace.” “I think I hit him once, yes the
first shot.
Beast. The filthy beast. The filthy beast. He struck my
mouth and my throat.”

"Hell's too sweet for these damned runaway cowards, the army'll deal them worse,"
Sherman answered, fumbling at wet buckles, unbridling the fallen horse.
Furiously the rain came down, in a moment the gully they were in
Flowed, a distant lightning flash drew cataracts on the hill and the lean
Pine-trees arched in the flurry of weather. Peace began screaming, "Rain, dear rain,
Poison his bullet wound I made, storm break his bones, blind him with pain.
Lightning scald his eyes but never kill him." Her voice broke and went wild,
Back her head snapped and she screamed like a beast and choked and sobbed like a child.
Sherman begged her to be quiet, then shook her with his hands, and he heard
Someone crying not far away, and panting up hill, and the storm poured.
"Who is there, who is it?" he said. Peace laughed, "The old mother of the dog.
Mother, have you brought him more food, he won't eat it, I fed him a lead slug."
Sherman's flashlight played across the rain-lines on a gray form they veiled,
Streaming soaked gray hair and a gray sick face and gray lips gasping, "Killed?"
"No. He's got away from us. You're his mother." "David's mother, yes, yes,"
Breathed the old woman blinking at the light and panting.
Then suddenly Peace

Laughed, "My God, to think that such a withered old nut-shell had such meat.
Mother, have you brought him more food, he won't eat it, I gave him lead to eat."
"Killed? She means he's dead." Hicks answered, "No, ma'am, he's got away up the hill."
Peace cried out, "Your milk was too weak, old poisoner; he'll rot in a prison, he will."
Hicks said, "Will you help me with the lady, ma'am; she's clean off her head.
Had a bad fall on the hill, her horse fell, busted its leg," he said.
"Broke his leg—my boy?" "No, no, the horse did, the horse fell, the lady's hurt."
"O poor Mrs. O'Farrell, it's you; do come, dear." "You, mother of dirt,"
Mumbled Peace, "I'll spit on you if you touch me. Wet hag don't dare," she screamed.
So the three stood gazing. Gray in the vault of the rain the flashlight gleamed.
Suddenly Peace straightened and fell, and Sherman lifted her and said,
"Mrs. Carrow, we must take her to your house; we must get her to bed."
Down the hill they toiled together, stumbling over pine-roots and stones;
Hundred-gurgling water shuttered from their ears the hurt horse's groans.

VIII

shaking.
David lay on the torrent hillside and tore at a flesh-wound in his thigh,

Drenched his finger-nails in the running blood praying God
to make him die.
Down in the valley James O'Farrell deepened his empty
mine in vain;
Down the dirt-wall of the shaft a serpent rivulet of the rain
Crawled, the lanterns gave it two red eyes. He dug in the
fume and dust
With religious fear, he found each lump of earth an omen to
trust,
Felt in every bit of gravel or quartz-brilliant or mica flake
Memories of some dream, and a promise sacred for a
prayer's sake.
There were two men bound for death, one lay on the hill
and tore his wound,
One was tearing at the deep breast of his mother, both were
death-bound.
Over all the valley and hill and over the black woods and
black waves
Poured the solid waters of the permanent rain from clouds
like caves.
From the mossed pines at Point Pinos south to the Big Sur
redwood groves
Trees were trembling with delight and dreaming roots
remembered their loves.
Seeds began to swell in their dreams and omens filled the
streaming earth,
Omens of lifting from concealment...of raising in the air .
...of bringing to birth...
Stirrings of the secret force that gathers itself under the
ground
To make signals in the splendid light of day when the year
turns round.

David prayed, "I have soiled myself to the bone, I am blacker
than hell and this night,
Let my body that sinned be punished, kill me and clean
me, bleed me all white,
Draw my spirit out of this sheath of death, the damnation
of proud hope
Tripped me while I ran in the hills, dear God this dirt be
covered up,
Buried under, damned and blotted down in the dirty breast
of the earth.
Draw my spirit from hiding, lift it up in the air, God: O
draw it forth.
To be least and lowest in heaven, and a servant of the happy
and sweet
Faithful in some little thing that sees no higher than to your
feet.
For I held your promise, O God the son of God to see you
a traitor and fool.
Crazy with pride, and the first and least temptation left me
whole,
There is no one such a fool, no traitor so little tempted, not
one,
Nowhere such a vessel and beast of weakness, nowhere
under the sun.
No one, nowhere," droned his despair; flowing blood en-
feebled it so he fell
Fast asleep in the waves of rain, in darkness like the valley
of hell.
Dreamless sleep like heavy and deep waters covered his
head, but when
Earth turned dawnward a weak dream swam over him, he
seemed a child again.

Playing and wading along the sea-beach he found a cave
among the rocks,
Where he lay to watch his father plowing the field above,
while flocks
Of white sea-birds hovered plowman and horses and the
happy and opened earth.
He was hidden, he would delight in the cave, nothing
should coax him forth.
David slept on the torrent hillside and James O'Farrell went
fast asleep
Over his tools in the valley tunnel, a sleep like lead or heavy
and deep
Waters covered his tired head, the lanterns flared and they
died, but when
Earth turned downward a dream swam down the darkness,
he seemed a child again.
Saw the yellow Ohio sucking its low shores under dim
trees;
He was fishing from the bank, his sister barefoot to the lean
knees
Helped him when the line was tangled on a snag, then she
went down
Among quicksands, the quicksands murmured, "I am your
mother, I am your own
Mother and sister, prod me with your fishing-pole, we are
down here,
Waiting to be weighed from concealment . . . to be lifted in
the wild air . . ."

IX

Peace O'Farrell awoke in the Carrows' empty farmhouse and
seemed to know

Instantly in the darkness all that had been done night hours
ago.
David's mother had tenderly undressed her and rubbed her
skin and her hair
With warm towels, and heated flat-irons for her feet so ice-
cold they were.
Tended her like an old nurse and soothed her moans and
stroked her head,
Given her some hot drink she would not swallow, and
tucked her in David's bed.
Peace remembered where her clothes were hung though she
had been senseless then.
First she thought she must off the old woman's night-dress,
though it was laundered clean
Still it was that old woman's; Peace felt purer when it lay
on the floor.
Warm from bed she felt no cold at all; but the planks cried,
and the door
Violently cracked its hinges, and if she should knock a chair
in the little hall
All the house would be up with lights and she would be
shamed before them all.
Lights, why, the hall was dizzy with light. Peace stood like
iron in the low door,
Like a wild beast cornered, too proud to hide her body. "I
will hide it no more,"
Moved her thought, "I have hid my womanhood too long,
from myself even.
Was it indeed so shameful?" Low in the west, more on the
sea than in heaven
Rolled the broad moon, all the rain was banished, the clouds
were gone in the west,

Level through the window played the splendor and lay like
flame on her breast.
Native of the light she burned on the oblong blackness all
silver and flame,
Female and not veiled, though eyes had been there to see
her she could have felt shame
No more than a cloudless mountain the low dawn fountains
up light to seek,
When the cedar shadows are upright like the cedars on the
slope to the peak.
She stole down the moonlit stair and found her clothes on
chairs by the hearth.
No one stirred in any chamber, and the door was not locked,
and she stole forth
Leaving to its ghosts an empty house, and followed the
shadows up
Eastward, with the wash of the lit sea behind, and ahead the
long slope.

X

James O'Farrell awoke and found himself in fear in the
dark of the womb.
Smothered in a horror of smelling earth in the musky
mother tomb.
Pressed by mass and brutal tons and buried out of sight
and of mind,
Stench of dead earth and starved lights, concealed and lost,
buried and blind.
Like a drowned man in mid-ocean or like a dead man in
the mid-heart
Of a public graveyard, caverned with thousands, a com-
munist people of dirt.

Nothing pure or erect or private, no separate honor, no in-
scribed stones,
But the liquids of each rotting body run through on a
brother's bones.
David Carrow awoke on the hill in the wonderful pure and
honey-sweet
Shining of the moon in the west, and the valley was like a
lake at his feet.
Night was only a dreamed hell, and the hurt in his thigh
was like the scar
Where a soldier gored the side of God, the flesh of the
morning star.
Strength of the human soul to suffer or sin to its dream's
uttermost
And forget it all in an hour and fling at the stars like a
young hawk loosed.
James O'Farrell broke through his dream and crawled
along the drift to the shaft,
Where a phantom pallor of twice-reflected moonlight silently
laughed,
Swimming on a puddle below the minehead, and up the
ladder a skin
Of green starless cloudless sky, and a falling, the river was
running in.
Seen from the top ladder-steps the valley was all a lake from
the south,
White and silent mirror of moonlight backing up from the
sand-barred mouth,
Beautiful and a death of hope. "Why should I dig again,"
he said.
"You are too strong old mother, you have damned me with
signs and lies, you hide your dead.

All the pretty promises broken, you liar. You'd have kept
me and choked me down there.
Suck your own dirt animal maw, I will not go down, I will
die in the air."
While the water lapped his feet he kicked the loose earth
over the rim,
Watched the eager cataract eat the heaps, and the banks
bulge down and brim.
There at the cataract end of life he stood and looked at the
hill slope,
Where there were height, and splendid inclines of spacious
moonlight, and a lifting hope.
Hope the ghost of hope reached back for a hold on life, like
the talking dead,
Shells of extinct men, the larvæ and masks that hover a
medium's head.
"I will go up in the hills," he said, "and find the sun in the
hills, and there
Work this body from concealment and weigh it up high in
the wild air..."
Walking like a stone-faced sleepwalker, his feet not feeling
the earth,
With the moon-gleam in his white eyes, he caught a horse
and looped the girth,
Took a hackamore along besides the bridle, and as he rode
Worked a knot in the rough horse-hair. From the bridge he
saw the moonlit flood
Plating half his pasture-land with pure sheet silver, and
half a mile down
Breakers flung black handfuls above the bar across the sea-
faring moon.

Peace O'Farrell strained up the slope and heard a sobbing under a pine.

"What are you doing here, gray mother?" "My boy. Whatever he's done he's mine.

God, dear God for the little boy that used to look into my face,

With his hands holding my finger and his body against my old knees.

In the milky days before they made a war, when my boy was my own,

When he wanted no woman but me and Christ and the war could let him alone.

Sherman Hicks went out the door when the rain was done in the moonlight shine,

And I followed him up the cow-path and fell down against a pine.

David's father came and passed me, and raving mad because of the stain

David tried to do to you, Mrs. O'Farrell, in the sickness of his brain."

"Sick, I know he's sick," Peace answered, "and sick enough and ready to die.

Show me which way Sherman went, and I'll beg off for your baby, I'll try.

Tell me which way Sherman went, you sack of bones get up if you can.

I'll take after Sherman Hicks and you must catch your crazy old man."

"Sweetheart," mumbled the old creature, "he went by the left by the broken tree,

But it's no use knocking the darkness now the moon's gone
down in the sea."

Peace went up the solid darkness and heard the mother
stumble behind.

Sherman clambered near the height, the west was black-
ened, the night blind.

James O'Farrell rode up the under-slope, fumbling the
hackamore still.

David Carrow stood on the height and there were six came
up the hill.

Three were men and two were women, the sixth was
neither man nor woman,

He was higher and lovelier than the pine-tops, and human
and not human.

He was a shining out of the east before the star that kills
the night,

Like a walking tower on the ridge between the hilltops, a
tower of light.

Peace O'Farrell believed he was the dawn, and by the light
of him saw

David kneel on the lonely hilltop, waving his arms with
wonder and awe.

And saw Sherman walking through a bush, dazzled and
black in the shine,

And saw risings at the sky, and pine-stumps move on the
mountain line.

David wept, his weakness and tears and pain were the serv-
ants of delight,

In the sudden apocalypse of love, the splitting asunder of
night.

Darkness was torn both ways like a cloth and cast on the
earth like a sheet;

David dared not look at the face for the fiery lightning of
the feet.
Wild choirs of boys' voices and of men's and women's wandered the mountain,
Music poured along the ridge and a pointed fire of flutes
like a fountain
Jetted from the peak and joined the swimming stars, the
stars sang chime,
Carollers ranged the breaking night for it was near the
Christmas time.

CHOROS

God was a hawk in the glow of the morning, a bee in the
rose that has stars for her petals,
The far lights felt him, the first-born lamps
Spun from the brush of his wings when he bathed in the
splendor of a firmament men's eyes never imaged,
Exulting in the beauty of things, a free eagle.
But love drew him dustward, for love's sake he stooped, like
a lover came God with a garland of suns
In his locks and the wild wine freedom on his lips
To the earth and the arms of a Jewess, and to house with a
tribe of tame serpents in the handmaiden planet
Of a least of the stars—the descent of the lover.

ANTICHOROS

You mountains of Asia a vain tale came to us once in old
days when we tasted the sunlight,
It was said that a Savior inherited the earth.
That his footsteps from Syria were fruitful and the honey of
his lips from Samaria made beautiful the nations
With powerful obedience and the peoples with peace.
Gray mountains of Asia we have come to the end of that
dream, when we touched it the iris-tinted
Bubble was a froth-work of blood and of fire.
David saw the hearts of men in the east, in Europe and
Asia too,
And his own was like a singing breaking glass, or a globe
of dew.
Peace O'Farrell saw little of these things, she only felt she
must save
David, and she hasted and caught Sherman's hand, and the
kiss that she gave
Was no sister of Iscariot's. "Why do you think I went on
the height,
Sherman dear, and risked myself in the night for nothing
and again in the night?
Was it to catch your slacker, what do I want with that, it
was all for you.
It was hard to find a chance, those married eyes can see me
through.

Think I'll make another chance if this one doesn't win me a
kiss?"

He was manageable, this man. And David was left to his
happiness.

CHOROS

When God was made man he had something to suffer, a
story of a stable, and to weep and be wounded,
Little clogs on great glory, and suddenly he soared
Wide of the Syrians and Romans, and the world that they
ravaged was an atom in a multitude, surrounded
By the splendor of the dawn's lamps dancing to their
Lord.

By the splendor, by the blazing, by the gladness, the brave
choir of the gods of the morning and the lords of the
night,

When he leaned and looked home from the marvelous
porches,

And his love like a home-dipping swallow came down from
the doors of the orient, the mountains of light,
The towers of the dawn that have roses for torches.

ANTICHOROS

No, no. He fell down to his place and has found it, when
he fainted from the far-stretched limbs of the cross,
And darkness fell home over Golgotha, and God
Tore in despair the great veil of his temple and regarded not
what dead men pushed up from the graves
On the hillside ill-hallowed, and grinding brown teeth
On the rottenness of jaws fallen inward ran down on the
city Jerusalem gibbering and mumbling
Of the earthquake and graves rent and a Roman desolation.

There were five on the hill-slope crying for death or love,
and one on the height.
Terrible radiations of intense desire streamed up the night.
While the fierce old anger David's father cut through the
swell and flow
Of the waves of vision deaf and blind. "You coward, I'd
have let you go.
Couldn't leave the women alone, you dirty coward?" He
fired, and the breath
Dove-shaped burned at David's mouth to nest in the bosom
of the splendor of death.
"Father, it doesn't hurt. Love, love, we are mixed in the
fire, the fire of the world
Ending, heaven beginning, spirits set free, the seas burned,
the stars hurled.
All the promises have come true. I love you, I love you,
Lord." He saw
The great vision leaning to kiss his eyes, and cried with de-
light and awe.

CHOROS

Mountains of Asia you masts of a little bark that floats on a
firmament of waters,
Himalayas have you seen across the beam-ends of the earth
The master-star of the stars when he brightens at the blos-
soming of midnight, when he beckons to his daughters,
And they wreath him with dances when his rays are sent
forth?
Dark Amazon daughter of the Andes when you flowed
full flood at the dawn-star when night died on the sea,
When the Andes and the Alps were answering from far,
Broad Volga bride-sister of the Urals, when the Kiolen

barked answer to Caucasus for the north was made free
Did they speak of that father, of that master, did they point
at that star?
And an hour before dawn when the night was split open
on the path of the planets to its height
Did they speak of the guidance of things, and the fury of
the wings of the speed of the light, and who governs the
light?

ANTICHOROS

Lord in the night, in the storm Lord, fear takes hold, hot
anger bites like a hound
Men's hearts, fearfully rages the storm, loud spirits are
stirred, lights flicker around,
Lights from the false ghosts' foreheads glitter through
night's black entrails pricked by the flashes,
Corposant lightnings leap on the crags, live fires on the
heights that the loud wind lashes.
Lord when our bowels were shrunken, bad passions had
maimed us, we raised seared eyes from the burning,
No cold Godhead's gaze made answer from heaven but a
young man's passionate yearning
Stooped to us, beautiful over the storm. More loved is our
Lord than a lamp in the night,
Sweeter than wild bees' hivings, stronger than storm in the
mountains, lovelier than light.

There the vision broke, for David's spirit had made it and
the spirit went out.
Only little noises moved in the night, dim sobbings, walk-
ings about.

Only James O'Farrell held fast the purpose that brought
him to the hill,
Rode across the scattered others, fumbling the horse-hair
hackamore still.
Reached at dawn the highest pine on the evident peak of
the hill, and there
Lifted his body from concealment and hanged it up high
in the white air.
Down the hill they heard the horse run loose, they saw
black fruit on the tree;
And the river broke its bar, and rushed into the bitter sea.

DIVINELY SUPERFLUOUS BEAUTY

The storm-dances of gulls, the barking game of seals,
Over and under the ocean . . .
Divinely superfluous beauty
Rules the games, presides over destinies, makes trees grow
And hills tower, waves fall.
The incredible beauty of joy.
Stars with fire the joining of lips, O let our loves too
Be joined, there is not a maiden
Burns and thirsts for love
More than my blood for you, by the shore of seals while the
wings
Weave like a web in the air
Divinely superfluous beauty.

THE MAID'S THOUGHT

Why listen, even the water is sobbing for something.
The west wind is dead, the waves
Forget to hate the cliff, in the upland canyons
Whole hillsides burst aglow
With golden broom. Dear how it rained last month,
And every pool was rimmed
With sulphury pollen dust of the wakening pines.
Now tall and slender suddenly
The stalks of purple iris blaze by the brooks,
The penciled ones on the hill;
This deerweed shivers with gold, the white globe-tulips
Blow out their silky bubbles,
But in the next glen bronze-bells nod, the does
Scalded by some hot longing
Can hardly set their pointed hoofs to expect
Love but they crush a flower;
Shells pair on the rock, birds mate, the moths fly double.
O it is time for us now
Mouth kindling mouth to entangle our maiden bodies
To make that burning flower.

FAUNA

I

On the low knoll above the Carmel mouth
A young man was alone he thought, and spoke
A song of how love came from the hot south
In the likeness of a girl, and like a bird
Flew at him from the burning sun and broke
His dream of peace. Dear hills you surely heard,
Pine-crested Santa Lucian hills, although
The old accustomed ocean's tidal flow

Is louder in your sense, and the low wind
Much more melodious than those tones of one
Who dreamed himself alone
And was not so, because a white girl leaned
Listening against a moss-grown boulder stone.

"Swift love a Marchwind swallow from the south
Came flying, the fleet breath of those burning wings
Blew ash and bitter dust into my mouth
From the heaped hearth, and set my house afire,
I laughed aloud to see the household things
Spoiled by hot violence and insane desire,
And thanked sweet love, merciless love, and gave her
Wine of my grapes to sip and my heart to savor.

"Fauna the sun has kissed your body brown,
The hot south sun, but O I hate the white

Teeth of bold waves that bite
Your shining ankles when you wander down
To dance on the dim shore a moonlit night.

"Because there is one girl's beauty and one girl's mouth
Forbidden me and gainsaid in the eyes of honor,
Swift love a springtime swallow from the south
Came flying and laughing; my numb lips I know
Have strong command to make no trial upon her,
Yet being solitary I may sing low
And thank sweet love, merciless love, and make
Music from lips parched up when my limbs ache

"In the furnace of vain yearning; O April bird
Flown up from the fair south, O fond fleet swallow
Why did you cry me to follow
(You Santa Lucian hills you also heard
That cry) this one prohibited path, a hollow

"Lane leading downward to false caverns dark
Of foreaccurst delight? I will not fare
That way nor task my spirit to tend that spark
Of loveliness that has no word, nor wreath
One flower but this in the free gold of that hair,
And though for longing I can hardly breathe
I will not speak nor touch, but singing alone
Make useless music shyly and silent moan.

"Fauna the sun has kissed your body brown,
The hot south sun, but O I hate the white
Teeth of those waves that bite
Your dancing ankles when you wander down
Alone under the dunes a moonlit night.

"The gates of her approach are jeweled and golden
Yet for a song I think they would fall down;
Fountains of fortunate waters un beholden
Jet in the shadowy court on gemlike fronds
Of emerald fern; the sun that burned you brown
Was not my mouth, my mouth is under bonds,
Fauna, and though I sing I may not kiss.
O thank sweet love, merciless love, for this.

"Love that flew up from the south a Marchwind bird,
You Santa Lucian hills moreover saw
The marvel there and the awe,
You Rivers of the South you also heard
The seatides of my sobbing heart withdraw.

"Up in the Carmel Valley are orchards laden
With fragrant apples when rich autumn weather
Hazes the shallowing stream the cattle wade in
And the amber hills and golden shores below,
There by the river ripening all together
The rosy and honey-clustered apples grow;
Fauna, that you and I might linger there
When the flushed fruits fall from the glowing air.

"Would God the sun that kissed your body brown
Had been my mouth, Fauna, or mine the white
Teeth of bold waves that bite
Your heedless ankles when you wander down
To dance under the dunes a moonlit night.

"She is not a virgin yet of me she is maiden
Forever; I must lay this chain to heart.

Nor dare we lie in the orchards autumn-laden,
Nor any glade of Santa Lucian leaves
Will shadow our heat of love, we are more apart
Than stone-peaked Grayback whom the high wind grieves
Stands from the autumn-stagnant Carmel's bar,
Or the strong northstar from the Scorpion star.

"Fauna, had fate been cast in finer fashion
The pines of the peninsula would have stirred
To my song, and every bird
By the Rivers of the South echoed my passion,
And the Santa Lucian summit-hills have heard

"The lightest whisper of our love, and bent
Above us for our love's sake to the seas,
While hand in hand under their heights we went
To gather by the Rivers of the South
Cool wreaths of fern and the hoards of perfumed bees
That hive there the right honey for your mouth.
But now because our fates are thus and so,
We must die sundered, we shall never go.

"Fauna, I hate the sun that kissed you brown,
Fauna, I hate the insolent delicate white
Teeth of those waves that bite
Your shining ankles when you wander down
To dance on the dim shore a moonlit night."

II

Then the white girl from her gray boulder stone:
"What ails you at grief to take delight in it
And make shy music and half silent moan?
When did love care for honor?" And he amazed:

"Love's a wild colt and snaps his teeth on the bit.
The wildest mustang that the mountain grazed
Will tame and take a rider; but I must mind
My honor though love's wilder and though love's blind."

And Nais, with laughter like the drippings of
The little waxen chambers of wild bees:

"O nicely! You are at ease
In your nice fort of honor and know not love,
You men, that is free wind on sweet wild seas.

"Love that forgets in a moment, and remembers
Ten thousand years one pale and sacred face.
That is a golden fisher of pearls and ambers
Out of the monstrous ocean gulfs, but evens
Ghostly remembrance with forgetfulness;
And would scorn honor though in the heaven of heavens
He stared in face of God . . . who should gaze down
Connivingly and frankly, without frown."

"Fauna, the sun has kissed your body brown,
The hot south sun. Dear hills, you also heard,
You holier hills, that word.
Sweet Rivers of the South that wander down
Seaward, have you seen love? a wilder bird

"Than the azure keen white-belted kingfisher
Who dives from your dense boughs on dapply trout.
When Fauna passes I go mad for her,
I'd build her a golden house and pave the whole
With rubies from my heart, and all without
Should burn with burnished jewels as a judged soul
In dishonorable hell with fire forever:
And there she'd sleep and I should visit her never.

"Fauna, the sun, the sun that kissed you brown
You must not say that it was not my mouth.
You Rivers of the South
What will you say dear rivers wandering down
Seaward, of my desire and my throat's drouth?"

Then Nais with laughter like the drippings of
Some broken honeycomb of lordless bees:
"My dear you'll find yourself in the house of love
When forty seasons pass! But of this passion
You'll find neither forgetfulness nor ease
Until I set your fates in lovelier fashion
And you in fairer ways and mind more fit
To ride this wild colt whose teeth grind the bit.

"Was there ever a foal that prayed not to be ridden?
You are the fool to let this foal run free.
Fauna, Fauna . . . is it she
Who lovelworthy for loving things forbidden
Was drunk in the deep vineyard over the sea?"

"O," he laughed out, "I saw her there, we saw
The vines trampled under her veering steps,
The vinestocks broken, the wonder there and the awe
When Fauna sang before the gleaners came,
Fetling her choice feet for the chosen grapes,
And dancing under the red sundown flame
Out of the vineyard to the olive hill,
And bidding all the vintage men be still,

"Because the mouth that kissed her body brown
Was not a man's but a great God's the Sun's.
There Nais we snared her once

In the fragrance of the grapes, there she fell down
By the winepress on the heap of hulls and stones."

Then Nais with laughter like crushed honeycomb:
"Would you love me if I'd been drunken there?
Deep in the south your Fauna finds her home,
A gold-ringed wife and childless. But look at me
Unclaimed of man: am I not lovelier,
I northward born not half so brown as she?
I could delight in apples, Fauna had
The purple-hearted grapes to make her glad

"Up in the Carmel Valley are orchards laden
And glowing with apples in the golden weather,
There let us walk together
Hand clasped in hand, the young man with the maiden
And love foregoing that Fauna moults no feather."

"With you!" he laughed roughly and ran away
Some forty paces toward the impassioned strand
Where beat on the lank river-bar all day
And break the white-maned racers from the west;
But Nais although he turned not waved her hand;
You Rivers of the South will you attest
The marvel then, the music there and awe?
Dear Santa Lucian hills you also saw.

For while her hand's white forest-flower was shaken,
A Santa Cruz white flagflower, there was heard
Music of flutes that stirred
The mountain, and mazed harps began to awaken
In all the mountain hollows every bird.

And from the sunfall splendor issued a fire
Of hosted voices chanting, and in the south
Strong-throbbing the strung throat of a Greek lyre
Caught up the tune, and northward there was none
To San Francisco harbor's golden mouth
But heard the music gather power and run
On the ocean shore, a triumph of harp and lyre,
Flute, hautboy, fife, and all that feed desire

With sound: sweet Rivers of the South you heard,
Dear Santa Lucian hills you surely saw
The wonder there and the awe
Of spiritual fingers plucking strings and paired
Lovers who drank delight of this new law

And tyranny of struck timbrels turning back
The man's lips to the girl's and love to love.
The sundown splendor died, the night was black
And sea-fog blotted the sky's golden swarms,
The waves laughed in the dark and Nais yet strove
On the bare grass in her desire's bare arms
Laughing with brave delights and sobbing low.
Believe or not, the dawn beheld them so.

But soon on dawn a second marvel appeared,
The Mother of Love out of the morning foam
As once of old she had come
Rose: Rivers of the South you also heard
Her tones more rich than new-torn honeycomb.

Dear Santa Lucian hills you also saw
The august and rosy and blameless body arisen
From waters broken, the wonder there and the awe,

The dove-wings and the glory: but what she said
I may not now repeat, but as from prison
It loosed that lover, then his doubts were dead
And having learned of Nais the way to woo
He'll flower in time and fling at Fauna too.

Fauna, the sun to burn her body brown
That is his mouth, nor must he hate the white
Teeth of bold waves that bite
Her dancing ankles if she wander down
Love-drunken near the dunes a moonlit night.

III

"When I crossed the seaward valley, by a sudden lightening
of the moon
I saw very love
There in Fauna incarnate, and the wind uttered a cry, the
waves a tune,
Wild swans cried above.
I saw love incarnate, all the beauty and all the cruelty and
all the splendor.
Where her sandals trod
On the creek-bed stones were gold and fire embracing but
between her tender
Breasts were Christ and God.
At her heels the leaping she-wolf that she feeds and keeps
for her companion
Followed, tawny and fierce.
When the noise of barking seals on Soberanes rocks came
up the canyon
Her wild friend pricked ears.
'Fauna, lately I learned of little Nais the way to love, O
Fauna, love me!'

So I cried, but laughter,
Vanishing laughter answered, she was gone, I heard the
 wild swans crying above me
And the wolf's growl after.
Blindly I sought her through the valley and in the moun-
 tains for the moon had vanished
And her feet were soundless.
Blindly I seek and wander through the beautiful peninsula
 like a banished
Spirit in waste and boundless
Demon-visited deserts, while desire in my dry throat cries
 Dearest where
Do your wild feet wander?
By what streamside in what forest flows the drunken fra-
 grance of your hair
For dull winds to squander?
Though I've asked the southwind and have questioned the
 eastwind and the north concerning her
And besought the sea,
None responds, yet surely at some ford or mountainhead she
 falters, turning her
Footsteps home to me.
Woodpeckers that thrid the wildwood branches, bluejays
 with black helmet-crests,
Vultures of the sun,
Underforest wildflowers have you felt her feet, birds have
 you seen her breasts
Flash or bright feet run?
Tell her that I've slashed the face of honor for desire to kiss
 her feet,
But to embrace her bodily
I being thoroughly mad would give myself to torture, or to
 taste her sweet

Lie in the windrows bloodily,
Downed by despicable death in the place where the equal
minded warmen meet,
And the Mother of Love smiles moodily."

IV

"Ah drunken Fauna I knew I'd find you here
In the deep vineyard tasting sunburnt grapes
And hidden among the sixfoot vines." "My dear
You knew me wisely but you've waited long.
The hour flashes and goes by, the girl escapes
Who timely tempted might have done some wrong
To honor, a kiss or so." "A kiss or two!"
"When little Nais was teaching you to woo,

"(A shameless one, that wanton) did you swear
Because the sun had kissed my body brown
Your mouth must do it?" "I'll own,
Witch, that you've wound me up in your bright hair."
"When you dared fling at her the bird was flown."

"A golden-feathered bird but wild and wild."
"Too shy for stupid fowlers to pursue."
"Wine-hearted Fauna, honey-throated child
What would the farmer say if he should come
And find us in his fragrant vineyard, you
Nibbling the fruit and me with finger and thumb
Squirting the juice into your breast?" "He'd say
'Boys, chase the man with sticks, the girl may stay.'"

"Fauna, let's cut the ripest clusters, these
Sun-colored as your round throat's loveliness,
And hide them in your dress

To share them yonder under the olive trees
Or the noon coolness of the cypresses."

"Those clusters were too ripe, a purple dew
Ran down between my breasts and stained the cloth.
Take out your hand. I will not walk with you
Anywhere under trees, I would not dare."

"My hand is trembling like a foolish moth
That touched flame." "Yet the grapes lie sweetly there
Between my breasts." "Come, Fauna, to the pool
Below the thicket liveoak trees, with cool

"Clear water underneath the shadowy hill
We'll wash those winestains from the well-dyed cloth."

"Dear, first will you take oath
To touch only my hands (or if you will
My lips perhaps) not more?" "I will kiss both

"Your hands and lips, come Fauna." Hand in hand
They passed through the hot vines and up the hill
Out of the sun to where clear waters stand
In a stone basin under braided leaves.
There they could smell the vineyard fragrance still,
But saw what fairy patterns the sun weaves
On standing water when his rays are shed
Through weft of tangled foliage overhead.

"Dear love your mouth is hot and you kiss more
Than lips or hands." "Sweet but no further down
Than the round throat or brown
Shoulders." "But you took oath." "I never swore."
"Ah the ground's soaking here, you'll soil my gown."

"It was already stained with shameless wine,
We'll wash it soon." "Traitor, you've torn it, too."
"O Fauna, Fauna, mine and mine and mine
Forever." "Listen, someone's coming!" "No,
The oakleaves murmur." "Why will you undo
The girdle as well? Sweet dearest let me go,
You have nearly made me naked." "Love, love, love!"
"O kiss me now! Kill me, it is not enough,

"Why should I live?" "Ah, Fauna." So they whispered
Together in the high noon solemn and hushed.
The pulpy grapes were crushed
That lay between her breast; a gentle lisp heard
From far of falling water charmed the flushed

Young wealth of amorous limbs trembling together;
No other sound through all the oaken grove
Moved, but their breathing. High in the bright blue weather
White awful wings kept watch lest man come near;
And other angel-ministers of love
Strode with drawn blades of metal blazing-clear
Silent through the oaks and cypresses, to guard
The sacred sleep that should come afterward.

"Fauna, the sun to kiss your body brown,
Feel it, my mouth. Fauna but let me bite
Those secret spots and white
The sun's lips never fondled." "All's your own,
You have nothing yet, all, all, O dear delight."

As harp-music and flutes made rich for Nais
Her northward joy, noon silence more august
And timeless wreaths made this; *maile leis*

From fern forests above Hawaiian strands
By no keel ferried but by the instant thrust
Of divine wings were borne: no woman's hands
Wove, odorous of the utmost ocean-west,
Those sacred wreaths; and from the sad red east

Cornflowers of Picardy with man's blood fed,
Pansies burnt brown with orphan tears, were brought,
And hyacinths too well wrought
With letters of the weary Alas then spread
World over beyond all wings of weeping thought.

Wide-flaunting poppies from the purpled fields
Between the Marne and Meuse; and with them came
Lake Como windflowers, and the honeyed yields
Of Tuscan hillsides and Calabrian dales;
And crocuses of vari-colored flame
From Africa; but the Sicilian vales
Sent all their fairest spring, to flower again
Neither on Ætna slopes nor Enna plain.

And out of battle-islanded Switzerland,
Obeying the Mother alpine roses flew
And hard white stars that grew
Higher up than ever a chamois-hunter's hand
Reached, on the crag-lip in the giddy blue

Above the crevassed glacier. And here gathered
Arab frankincense buds and Syrian myrrh,
With mazy seaflowers that the seafoam fathered
In warm live waters south the Hydaspien gulf,
They fell like snowflakes from the flaming air,
And frightened by the wonder Fauna's wolf

That still had watched, ran off. From the upper Nile
Came lotuses, and laurels from Lesbos isle.

Great lilies from large Asia congregated
Amazed the tolerant vintage-month with massed
Mounds of May sweet; the vast
Sky-heads of the earth-out-of-mind Himalaya mated
Their snow-buds with starved bloom Siberia cast.

And soon came homelier and more kindly blossoms,
Orchids from under the Araucanian Andes
Were forced into the beauty of Fauna's bosoms,
Through her good sleep, where the crushed grapes had lain,
But maidenly in the opening of her hand is
A white globe-tulip fainting without stain,
Fed from peninsular forests of Monterey,
And at her feet white flagflowers fainted away,

The Santa Cruz wood-irises; and brown
As her sunned body and excellent as her mouth
Was mingled a new growth,
Bronze-bells of redwood darkneses that drown
The Santa Lucian Rivers of the South.

While hermit yuccas from La Cumbre wasted
Flaked petal-wealth and faint white fragrance there,
Young sand-verbena from south shores was tasted
Intense among the perfumes, native poppies
Paled in the splendor of the spun-gold hair,
Wild yellow violets of the liveoak coppice
Flowered up through all, strange-shapen and blood-red
Were phallic snowplants on the perfumed bed

Strown for a laughing symbol; from the south
They also, from the firforest that grows
About Bear Lake or close
Under cold Grayback; and with that uncouth
Male flower mated the moist and female rose.

And crested serpents from the vineyard creeping,
And cold striped snakes out of the cistern came,
And pierced the flowers and found the lovers sleeping;
In sacred joy; with jewel-like eyes they gazed,
And fondled them with forky tongues aflame,
And drunk with blended fragrances upraised
Each one his dainty hard and carven head
To hiss good blessings on the bridal bed.

So from new moon until the next moon quickened
Innumerably incorruptible
The flowers remained, nor fell
A single petal nor one perfume sickened.
Fair lovers in the favored bed farewell.

THE SONGS OF THE DEAD MEN TO THE THREE DANCERS

I. TO DESIRE

(Here a dancer enters and dances.

Who is she that is fragrant and desirable,
Clothed but enough to wake wantonness,
And proud of her polished lithe body and her narrowing of
 kohl-darkened eyelids with arrows between them?
Ah, ah, ah! Goddess of the world,
Young serpent in the veins of the rock,
In the mountain of jewels a young serpent, in the veins of
 a man a sweet viper all emerald: ah Goddess
Are we proof to the hilt, are you pleased with us
When the splendor of your undulant insolence
Pricks the dark entrails of death, his foregathered grow hot
 for you, the skeleton stands up to be amorous?
Ah, ah, ah! Goddess of the flesh
Will you think it a gift lacking grace
That the gates of the grave have been battered before you,
 the iron doors to us dead in the deepest abyss?
For who has gone down to the dead or has touched them?
Did Jesus of Nazareth when he lay in deep hell
For three days and since lived as they say and has failed us?
No man nor no woman has gone down to us dead
Living until now, but the proof is here now, ah beautiful
 torture us again and again.

We are fleshless, we tremble to your flesh,
Dear Goddess to taste of the dew
On your arms when you dance or to lip at the glitter of your
burnished thighs or the breast of your barrenness.
In the book of your triumphs with no term
Inscribe a more wonderful deed,
That you quickened the dead, that you lifted the flesh of
the fleshless, ah Goddess, ah! dancing, us dead men.
(The dancer goes out.

II. TO DEATH

(A second dancer enters and dances.
Was it lovely to lie among violets ablossom in the valleys of
love on the breast of the south?
It was lovely but lovelier now
To behold the calm head of the dancer we dreaded, his curls
are as tendrils of the vineyard, O Death
Sweet and more sweet is your dancing.
Like the swoon of fulfilment of love in some lonelier vale
among flowers is the languor that flushes us,
O why did we fear him, for Death
Is a beautiful youth and his eyes are sleepy, the lids droop
heavily with wine when he wakens,
And his breast is more smooth than a dove's.
Fair Garda, gay water with olives engarlanded, lake of blue
laughter in a bay of the Alps
It is better for our spirits to be here
In the desolate hollows of darkness beholding the beauty of
our dancer than at rest on your hills
Of anemones and jonquils immingled.
And gay from the glacier womb, boy-throated for gladness
to shout where the snow-crag throng

Ran foaming the rivulet Rhone,
When the mountains were sprung for his passage, the ridges
of granite were splintered; and lovely the lake was
Under the vineyards of Vaud,
And at evening empurpling the peaks of the Chablais were
painted on the sleep and deep shadow of its waters
When the sundown was flame on la Dole.
But the best of the course is the last broad slumber, O river
of France to forget and go down
Slow-gliding and sultrily stagnant
Past Arles to the Gulf of the Lion and that azure and beautiful
grave in the waves of the south
That are warmest and best...and an end...
(The dancer has gone out.

III. TO VICTORY

(A third dancer enters and dances.
Use us again, you in the world only of goddesses worshipful
now or adored,
Helmeted victory!
How did we bow, even in dream, visions betraying us, unto
some other and base
Power when your splendor there
Struck on the gates? Use us again, awfully beautiful. Blood
will reblossom from death
Burning to minister
All its revived fire at your feet, only to merit an eye-
glance, or flash of your hand's
Gauntleted majesty.
Pounding of guns clear you a path, trample the ports of
decision and triumph on the slain.
Men when they fall in it

Gayly they die, scattering for flowers rosy and white at your
feet the red blood and pale brains
Carpeting battlefields.
Towering in steel, terribly armed, which of the daughters of
heaven is so hotly desired?
None has embraced you yet,
All of us burn, beautifully mad, frantic with lust of your
beauty and with thirst of your mouth's
Terrible maidenhood;
Holy and white, under the steel, hide the sweet limbs of our
longing desire in a deep
Sacred virginity.
Emperors and lords gave her in vain cities of gold and whole
nations of blood, for she took
Gifts, but rejected them.
Neither a king's bribe nor a bold armorer's hammer pre-
vails to unrivet the steel
Belt of her maidenhood,
Yet shall our prayer surely be heard. Goddess of glory re-
voke our exemption of death,
Twice let us die for you.
Use us again, though but an hour: surely the prayer is as
humble as the gift would be great,
Helmeted Victory.

(The dancer goes out

TO HIS FATHER

Christ was your lord and captain all your life,
He fails the world but you he did not fail,
He led you through all forms of grief and strife
Intact, a man full-armed, he let prevail
Nor outward malice nor the worse-fanged snake
That coils in one's own brain against your calm,
That great rich jewel well guarded for his sake
With coronal age and death like quieting balm.
I Father having followed other guides
And oftener to my hurt no leader at all,
Through years nailed up like dripping panther hides
For trophies on a savage temple wall
Hardly anticipate that reverend stage
Of life, the snow-wreathed honor of extreme age.

THE TRUCE AND THE PEACE

(November, 1918)

I

Peace now for every fury has had her day,
Their natural make is moribund, they cease,
They carry the inward seeds of quick decay,
Build breakwaters for storm but build on peace.
The mountains' peace answers the peace of the stars,
Our petulances are cracked against their term.
God built our peace and plastered it with wars,
Those frescoes fade, flake off, peace remains firm.
In the beginning before light began
We lay or fluttered blind in burdened wombs,
And like that first so is the last of man,
When under death for husband the amorous tombs
Are covered and conceive; nine months go by
No midwife called, nine years no baby's cry.

2

Peace now, though purgatory fires were hot
They always had a heart something like ice
That coldly peered and wondered, suffering not
Nor pleased in any park, nor paradise
Of slightly swelling breasts and beautiful arms
And throat engorged with very carnal blood.
It coldly peered and wondered, "Strong God your charms

Are glorious, I remember solitude.
Before youth towered we knew a time of truth
To have eyes was nearly rapture." Peace now, for war
Will find the cave that childhood found and youth.
Ten million lives are stolen and not one star
Dulled; wars die out, life will die out, death cease,
Beauty lives always and the beauty of peace.

3

Peace to the world in time or in a year,
In the inner world I have touched the instant peace.
Man's soul's a flawless crystal coldly clear,
A cool white mansion that he yields in lease
To tenant dreams and tyrants from the brain
And riotous burnings of the lovelier flesh.
We pour strange wines and purples all in vain.
The crystal remains pure, the mansion fresh.
All the Asian bacchanals and those from Thrace
Lived there and left no wine-mark on the walls.
What were they doing in that more sacred place
All the Asian and the Thracian bacchanals?
Peace to the world to-morrow or in a year,
Peace in that mansion white, that crystal clear.

4

Peace now poor earth. They fought for freedom's sake,
She was starving in a corner while they fought.
They knew not whom they stabbed by Onega Lake,
Whom lashed from Archangel, whom loved, whom sought.
How can she die, she is the blood unborn,
The energy in earth's arteries beating red,

The world will flame with her in some great morn,
The whole great world flame with her, and we be dead.
Here in the west it grows by dim degrees,
In the east flashed and will flame terror and light.
Peace now poor earth, peace to that holier peace
Deep in the soul held secret from all sight.
That crystal, the pure home, the holier peace,
Fires flaw not, scars the cruelest cannot crease.

5

South of the Big Sur River up the hill
Three graves are marked thick weeds and grasses heap;
Under the forest there I have stood still
Hours, thinking it the sweetest place to sleep ...
Strewing all-sufficient death with compliments
Sincere and unrequired, coveting peace ...
Boards at the head not stones, the text's rude paints
Mossed, rain-rubbed ... wasting hours of scanty lease
To admire their peace made perfect. From that height
But for the trees the whole valley might be seen,
But for the heavy dirt, the eye-pits no light
Enters, the heavy dirt, the grass growing green
Over the dirt, the molelike secretness,
The immense withdrawal, the dirt, the quiet, the peace

6

Women cried that morning, bells rocked with mirth
We all were glad a long while afterward,
But still in dreary places of the earth
A hundred hardly fed shall labor hard
To clothe one belly and stuff it with soft meat,

Blood paid for peace but still those poor shall buy it,
This sweat of slaves is no good wine but yet
Sometimes it climbs to the brain. Be happy and quiet,
Be happy and live, be quiet or God might wake.
He sleeps in the mountain that is heart of man's heart,
He also in promontory fists, and make
Of stubborn-muscle limbs, he will not start
For a little thing ... his great hands grope, uncloze,
Feel out for the main pillars ... pull down the house ...

7

After all, after all we endured, who has grown wise?
We take our mortal momentary hour
With too much gesture, the derisive skies
Twinkle against our wrongs, our rights, our power.
Look up the night, starlight's a steadying draught
For nerves at angry tension. They have all meant well,
Our enemies and the knaves at whom we've laughed,
The liars, the clowns in office, the kings in hell,
They have all meant well in the main ... some of them
tried
The mountain road of tolerance ... They have made war,
Conspired, oppressed, robbed, murdered, lied and lied,
Meant well, played the loud fool ... and star by star
Winter Orion pursues the Pleiades
In pale and huge parade, silence and peace.

8

That ice within the soul, the admonisher
Of madness when we're wildest, the unwinking eye
That measures all things with indifferent stare,

Choosing far stars to check near objects by,
That quiet lake inside and underneath,
Strong, undisturbed by any angel of strife,
Being so tranquil seems the presence of death,
Being so central seems the essence of life.
Is it perhaps that death and life make truce
In neutral zone while their old feud beyond
Fires the towered cities? Surely for a strange use
He sphered that eye of flawless diamond.
It does not serve him but with line and rod
Measures him, how indeed should God serve God?

9

It does not worship him, it will not serve.
And death and life within that Eye combine,
Within that only untorturable nerve
Of those that make a man, within that shrine
Which there is nothing ever can profane,
Where life and death are sister and brother and lovers,
The golden voice of Christ were heard in vain,
The holy spirit of God visibly hovers.
Small-breasted girls, lithe women heavy-haired,
Loves that once grew into our nerves and veins,
Yours Freedom was desire that deeper dared
To the citadel where mastery remains,
Yours to the spirit . . . discount the penny that is
Ungivable, this Eye, this God, this Peace.

10

All in a simple innocence I strove
To give myself away to any power,

Wasting on women's bodies wealth of love,
Worshipping every sunrise mountain tower;
Some failure mocked me still denying perfection,
Parts of me might be spenden not the whole,
I sought of wine surrender and self-correction
I failed, I could not give away my soul.
Again seeking to give myself I sought
Outward in vain through all things, out through God,
And tried all heights, all gulfs, all dreams, all thought.
I found this wisdom on the wonderful road,
The essential Me cannot be given away,
The single Eye, God cased in blood-shot clay.

II

Peace to the world in time or in a year,
But always all our lives this peace was ours.
Peace is not hard to have, it lies more near
Than breathing to the breast. When brigand powers
Of anger or pain or the sick dream of sin
Break our soul's house outside the ruins we weep.
We look through the breached wall, why there within
All the red while our peace was lying asleep.
Smiling in dreams while the broad knives drank blood,
The robbers triumphed, the roof burned overhead,
The eternal living and untroubled God
Lying asleep upon a lily bed.
Men screamed, the bugles screamed, walls broke in the air,
We never knew till then that He was there.

NATURAL MUSIC

The old voice of the ocean, the bird-chatter of little rivers,
(Winter has given them gold for silver
To stain their water and bladed green for brown to line their
banks)
From different throats intone one language.
So I believe if we were strong enough to listen without
Divisions of desire and terror
To the storm of the sick nations, the rage of the hunger-
smitten cities,
Those voices also would be found
Clean as a child's; or like some girl's breathing who dances
alone
By the ocean-shore, dreaming of lovers.

POINT JOE

Point Joe has teeth and has torn ships; it has fierce and
solitary beauty;

Walk there all day you shall see nothing that will not make
part of a poem.

I saw the spars and planks of shipwreck on the rocks, and
beyond the desolate

Sea-meadows rose the warped wind-bitten van of the pines,
a fog-bank vaulted

Forest and all, the flat sea-meadows at that time of year
were plated

Golden with the low flower called footsteps of the spring,
millions of flowerets,

Whose light suffused upward into the fog flooded its vault,
we wandered

Through a weird country where the light beat up from earth-
ward, and was golden.

One other moved there, an old Chinaman gathering seaweed
from the sea-rocks,

He brought it in his basket and spread it flat to dry on the
edge of the meadow.

Permanent things are what is needful in a poem, things
temporally

Of great dimension, things continually renewed or always present.

Grass that is made each year equals the mountains in her past and future;

Fashionable and momentary things we need not see nor speak of.

Man gleaning food between the solemn presences of land and ocean,

On shores where better men have shipwrecked, under fog and among flowers,

Equals the mountains in his past and future; that glow from the earth was only

A trick of nature's, one must forgive nature a thousand graceful subtleties.

POINT PINOS AND POINT LOBOS

I

A lighthouse and a graveyard and gaunt pines
Not old, no tree lives long here, where the northwind
Has forgot mercy. All night the light blinks north,
The Santa Cruz mountain redwoods hate its flashing,
The night of the huge western water takes it,
The long rays drown a little off shore, hopelessly
Attempting distance, hardly entering the ocean.
The lighthouse, and the gaunt boughs of the pines,
The carved gray stones, and the people of the graves.

They came following the sun, here even the sun is bitter,
A scant gray heartless light down wind, glitter and sorrow,
The northwind fog much kindlier. When shall these dead
arise,

What day stand up from the earth among the broken pines?
A God rearsen will raise them up, this walking shadow?
Which tortured trunk will you choose, Lord, to be hewn to
a cross?

I am not among the mockers, Master, I am one of your
lovers,

Ah weariest spirit in all the world, we all have rest
Being dead but you still strive, nearly two thousand years
You have wrestled for us against God, were you not con-
quered

At the first close, when the long horrible nails went home
Between the slender bones of the hands and feet, you fright-
fully

Heightened above man's stature saw the hateful crowd
Shift and sicken below, the sunburnt legionaries
Draw back out of the blood-drops . . . Far off the city
Slid on its hill, the eyes fainting. The earth was shaken
And the sun hid, you were not quieted. Men may never
Have seen you as they said in the inner room of the house,
Nor met you on the dusty suburb road toward Emmaus,
But nine years back you stood in the Alps and wept for
Europe,

To-day pale ghost you walk among the tortured pines
Between the graves here and the sea.

Ah but look seaward,

For here where the land's charms dies love's chain falls loose,
and the freedom of the eyes and the fervor of the spirit
Sea-hawks wander the huge gray water, alone in a nihilist
simplicity, cleaner than the primal

Wings of the brooding of the dove on the waste of the waters
beginning, perplexed with creation; but ours

Turned from creation, returned from the beauty of things to
the beauty of nothing, to a nihilist simplicity,

Content with two elements, the wave and the cloud, and if
one were not there then the other were lovelier to turn to,

And if neither . . . O shining of night, O eloquence of si-
lence, the mother of the stars, the beauty beyond beauty,

The sea that the stars and the sea and the mountain bones
of the earth and men's souls are the foam on, the opening
Of the womb of that ocean.

You have known this, you have known peace, and
forsaken

Peace for pity, you have known the beauty beyond beauty
And the other shore of God. You will never again know
them,

Except he slay you, the spirit at last, as more than once
The body, and root out love. Is it for this you wander
Tempting him through the thickets of the wolfish world?
O a last time in the last wrench of man made godlike
Shall God not rise, bitterly, the power behind power, the last
star

That the stars hide, rise and reveal himself in anger—
Christ, in that moment when the hard loins of your ancient
Love and unconquerable will crack to lift up humanity
The last step heavenward—rise and slay, and you and our
children

Suddenly stumble on peace? The oceans we shall have tamed
then

Will dream between old rocks having no master, the earth
Forget corn, dreaming her own precious weeds and free
Forests, from the rivers upward; our tributary planets
Tamed like the earth, the morning star and the many-
mooned

Three-belted giant, and those red sands of Mars between
them,

Rust off the metal links of human conquest, the engines
Rust in the fields, and under that old sun's red waning
Nothing forever remember us.

And you at peace then
Not walk by a lighthouse on a wild north foreland
Choosing which trunk of the poor wind-warped pines
Will hew to a cross, and your eye's envy searching
The happiness of these bleak burials. Unhappy brother
That high imagination mating mine

Has gazed deeper than graves; is it unendurable
To know that the huge season and wheel of things
Turns on itself forever, the new stars pass
And the old return and find out their old places,
And these gray dead infallibly shall arise
In the very flesh . . . But first the camel bells
Tinkle into Bethlehem, the men from the east
Gift you sweet-bedded between Mary's breasts,
And no one in the world has thought of Golgotha.

II

Gray granite ridges over swinging pits of sea, pink stone-
crop spangles
Stick in the stone, the stiff plates of the cypress-boughs divide
the sea's breath,
Hard green cutting soft gray . . . I know the uplands
And windy pastures where the great globes of the oaks are
like green planets
Each in his place; I know the scents and resonances of deso-
late hills,
The wide-winged shadows of the vultures wandering across
them; and I have visited
Deserts and many-colored rocks . . . mountains I know
From the Dent d'Oche in Savoy and that peak of the south
past Saint Gingolphe
To Grayback and Tahoma . . . as for sea-borderers
The caverned Norman cliffs north of the Seine's mouth, the
Breton sea-heads, the Cornish
Horns of their west had known me as a child before I knew
Point Dume or Pinos
Or Sur, the sea-light in his forehead: also I heard my masters

Speak of Pelorum head and the Attic rocks of Sunium, or
that Nymphæan
Promontory under the holy mountain Athos, a warren of
monks
Walls in with prayer-cells of old stone, perpetual incense
and religion
Smoke from it up to him who is greater than they guess,
through what huge emptiness
And chasms above the stars seeking out one who is here
already, and neither
Ahunting nor asleep nor in love; and Actium and the Acro-
ceraunian
And Chersonese abutments of Greek ridges on the tideless
wave
They named, my spirit has visited . . . there is no place
Taken like this out of deep Asia for a marriage-token, this
planted
Asiaward over the west water. Our race nor the great springs
we draw from,
Not any race of Europe, nor the Syrian blood from south
of Lebanon
Our fathers drank and mixed with ours, has known this
place nor its like nor suffered
The air of its religion. The elder shapes and shows in ex-
treme Asia,
Like remote mountains over immeasurable water, half seen,
thought clouds,
Of God in the huge world from the Altai eagle-peaks and
Mongol pastures
To the home of snow no wing inhabits, temples of height
on earth, Gosainthan
And Gaurisankar north of Ganges, Nanda Devi a mast of
the ship

We voyage upon among the stars; and the earth-sprung
multitudes of India,
Where human bodies grow like weeds out of the earth, and
life is nothing,
There is so much life, and like the people the divinities of
the people
Swarm, and the vulgar worship; thence far east to the islands
of this ocean
Our sun is buried in, theirs born of, to the noble slope of
the lone peak
Over Suruga Bay, and the headlands of Hai-nan: God with-
out name,
God without form, the Lord of Asia, is here as there.

Serenely smiling

Face of the godlike man made God, who tore the web of
human passions
As a yellow lion the antelope-hunter's net, and freeing him-
self made free
All who could follow, the tissue of new births and deaths
dissolved away from him,
He reunited with the passionless light sky, not again to
suffer
The shame of the low female gate, freed, never to be born
again,
Whom Maha Maya bore in the river garden, the Himalayan
barrier northward
Bounding the world: is it freedom, smile of the Buddha,
surely freedom? For someone
Whispered into my ear when I was very young, some serpent
whispered
That what has gone returns; what has been, is; what will
be, was; the future

Is a farther past; our times he said fractions of arcs of the
great circle;
And the wheel turns, nothing shall stop it nor destroy it,
we are bound on the wheel,
We and the stars and seas, the mountains and the Buddha.
Weary tidings
To cross the weary, bitter to bitter men: life's conqueror
will not fear
Life; and to meditate again under the sacred tree, and again
Vanquish desire will be no evil.

The evening opens
Enormous wings out of the west, the sad red splendid light
beats upward
These granite gorges, the wind-battered cypress trees blacken
above them,
The divine image of my dream smiles his immortal peace,
commanding
This old sea-garden, crumble of granite and old buttressed
cypress trunks,
And the burnt place where that wild girl whose soul was
fire died with her house.

III

I have spoken on sea-forelands with the lords of life, the
men wisdom made Gods had nothing
So wise to tell me nor so sweet as the alternation of white
sunlight and brown night,
The beautiful succession of the breeding springs, the enormous
rhythm of the stars' deaths
And fierce renewals: O why were you rebellious, teachers
of men, against the instinctive God,

One striving to overthrow his ordinances through love and
the other crafty-eyed to escape them
Through patient wisdom: though you are wiser than all men
you are foolisher than the running grass,
That fades in season and springs up in season, praising
whom you blame.

For the essence and the end
Of his labor is beauty, for goodness and evil are two things
and still variant, but the quality of life as of death and
of light
As of darkness is one, one beauty, the rhythm of that Wheel,
and who can behold it is happy and will praise it to the
people.

NOT OUR GOOD LUCK

Not our good luck nor the instant peak and fulfilment of
time gives us to see
The beauty of things, nothing can bridle it.
God who walks lightning-naked on the Pacific has never
been hidden from any
Puddle or hillock of the earth behind us.
Between the mean mud tenements and huddle of the filth of
Babylon the river Euphrates;
And over the tiled brick temple buttresses
And the folly of a garden on arches, the ancients simple and
silent tribe of the stars
Filed, and for all her gods and the priests' mouths
God also moved on the city; or a certain young tribesman
come down from the mountains of the north
Espied him in the eyes of a temple harlot;
Whom presently, as then, when the priests have choked him
with perfume some prophet like a desert camel
Shall talk with in the ridges above the rock-tombs.

Dark ships drawing in from the sundown and the islands
of the south, great waves with gray vapor in your hollows
And whitening of high heads coming home from the west.
From Formosa or the skerries of Siberia and the sight of
the eyes that have widened for the sky-peaks of Asia:
That he touched you is no wonder, that you slid from his
hand

Is an old known tale to our foreland cypresses, no news to
the Lobos granite, no marvel
To Point Pinos Light and the beacon at Point Sur.
But here is the marvel, he is nowhere not present, his beauty,
it is burning in the midland villages
And tortures men's eyes in the alleys of cities.

Far-flown ones, you children of the hawk's dream future
when you lean from a crag of the last planet on the
ocean
Of the far stars, remember we also have known beauty.

THE CYCLE

The clapping blackness of the wings of pointed cormorants,
the great indolent planes
Of autumn pelicans nine or a dozen strung shorelong,
But chiefly the gulls, the cloud-caligraphers of windy spirals
before a storm,
Cruise north and south over the sea-rocks and over
That bluish enormous opal; very lately these alone, these
and the clouds
And westering lights of heaven, crossed it; but then
A hull with standing canvas crept about Point Lobos...
now all day long the steamers
Smudge the opal's rim; often a seaplane troubles
The sea-wind with its throbbing heart. These will increase,
the others diminish; and later
These will diminish; our Pacific have pastured
The Mediterranean torch and passed it west across the
fountains of the morning;
And the following desolation that feeds on Crete
Feed here; the clapping blackness of the wings of pointed
cormorants, the great sails
Of autumn pelicans, the gray sea-going gulls,
Alone will streak the enormous opal, the earth have peace
like the broad water, our blood's
Unrest have doubled to Asia and be peopling
Europe again, or dropping colonies at the morning star:
what moody traveler

Wanders back here, watches the sea-fowl circle
The old sea-granite and cemented granite with one regard,
and greets my ghost,
One temper with the granite, bulking about here?

SALMON-FISHING

The days shorten, the south blows wide for showers now,
The south wind shouts to the rivers,
The rivers open their mouths and the salt salmon
Race up into the freshet.
In Christmas month against the smoulder and menace
Of a long angry sundown
Red ash of the dark solstice, you see the anglers,
Pitiful, cruel, primeval,
Like the priests of the people that built Stonehenge,
Dark silent forms, performing
Remote solemnities in the red shallows
Of the river's mouth at the year's turn,
Drawing landward their live bullion, the bloody mouths
And scales full of the sunset
Twitch on the rocks, no more to wander at will
The wild Pacific pasture nor wanton and spawning
Race up into fresh water.

TO THE HOUSE

I am heaping the bones of the old mother
To build us a hold against the host of the air;
Granite the blood-heat of her youth
Held molten in hot darkness against the heart
Hardened to temper under the feet
Of the ocean cavalry that are maned with snow
And march from the remotest west.
This is the primitive rock, here in the wet
Quarry under the shadow of waves
Whose hollows mouthed the dawn; little house each stone
Baptized from that abysmal font
The sea and the secret earth gave bonds to affirm you.

TO THE ROCK THAT WILL BE A CORNERSTONE OF THE HOUSE

Old garden of grayish and ochre lichen,
How long a time since the brown people who have vanished
from here
Built fires beside you and nestled by you
Out of the ranging sea-wind? A hundred years, two hundred,
You have been dissevered from humanity
And only known the stubble squirrels and the headland
rabbits,
Or the long-fetlocked plowhorses
Breaking the hilltop in December, sea-gulls following,
Screaming in the black furrow; no one
Touched you with love, the gray hawk and the red hawk
touched you
Where now my hand lies. So I have brought you
Wine and white milk and honey for the hundred years of
famine
And the hundred cold ages of sea-wind.

I did not dream the taste of wine could bind with granite,
Nor honey and milk please you; but sweetly
They mingle down the storm-worn cracks among the mosses,
Interpenetrating the silent
Wind-prints of ancient weathers long at peace, and the older

Scars of primal fire, and the stone
Endurance that is waiting millions of years to carry
A corner of the house, this also destined.
Lend me the stone strength of the past and I will lend you
The wings of the future, for I have them.
How dear you will be to me when I too grow old, old
comrade.

TO THE STONE-CUTTERS

Stone-cutters fighting time with marble, you foredefeated
Challengers of oblivion
Eat cynical earnings, knowing rock splits, records fall down,
The square-limbed Roman letters
Scale in the thaws, wear in the rain. The poet as well
Builds his monument mockingly;
For man will be blotted out, the blithe earth die, the brave
sun
Die blind, his heart blackening:
Yet stones have stood for a thousand years, and pained
thoughts found
The honey peace in old poems.

SUICIDE'S STONE

Peace is the heir of dead desire,
Whether abundance killed the cormorant
In a happy hour, or sleep or death
Drowned him deep in dreamy waters,
Peace is the ashes of that fire,
The heir of that king, the inn of that journey.

This last and best and goal: we dead
Hold it so tight you are envious of us
And fear under sunk lids contempt
Death-day greetings are the sweetest.
Let trumpets roar when a man dies
And rockets fly up, he has found his fortune.

Yet hungering long and pitiable
That way, you shall not reach a finger
To pluck it unripe and before dark
Creep to cover: life broke ten whipstocks
Over my back, broke faith, stole hope,
Before I denounced the covenant of courage.

WISE MEN IN THEIR BAD HOURS

Wise men in their bad hours have envied
The little people making merry like grasshoppers
In spots of sunlight, hardly thinking
Backward but never forward, and if they somehow
Take hold upon the future they do it
Half asleep, with the tools of generation
Foolishly reduplicating
Folly in thirty-year periods; they eat and laugh too,
Groan against labors, wars and partings,
Dance, talk, dress and undress; wise men have pretended
The summer insects enviable;
One must indulge the wise in moments of mockery.
Strength and desire possess the future,
The breed of the grasshopper shrills, "What does the future
Matter, we shall be dead?" Ah, grasshoppers,
Death's a fierce meadowlark: but to die having made
Something more equal to the centuries
Than muscle and bone, is mostly to shed weakness.
The mountains are dead stone, the people
Admire or hate their stature, their insolent quietness,
The mountains are not softened nor troubled
And a few dead men's thoughts have the same temper.

CONTINENT'S END

At the equinox when the earth was veiled in a late rain,
wreathed with wet poppies, waiting spring,
The ocean swelled for a far storm and beat its boundary,
the ground-swell shook the beds of granite.

I gazing at the boundaries of granite and spray, the established sea-marks, felt behind me
Mountain and plain, the immense breadth of the continent,
before me the mass and doubled stretch of water.

I said: You yoke the Aleutian seal-rocks with the lava and coral sowings that flower the south,
Over your flood the life that sought the sunrise faces ours
that has followed the evening star.

The long migrations meet across you and it is nothing to you, you have forgotten us, mother.
You were much younger when we crawled out of the womb
and lay in the sun's eye on the tideline.

It was long and long ago; we have grown proud since then
and you have grown bitter; life retains
Your mobile soft unquiet strength; and envies hardness, the insolent quietness of stone.

The tides are in our veins, we still mirror the stars, life is your child, but there is in me

Older and harder than life and more impartial, the eye that
watched before there was an ocean.

That watched you fill your beds out of the condensation of
thin vapor and watched you change them,
That saw you soft and violent wear your boundaries down,
eat rock, shift places with the continents.

Mother, though my song's measure is like your surf-beat's
ancient rhythm I never learned it of you.
Before there was any water there were tides of fire, both
our tones flow from the older fountain.

POEMS REPRINTED FROM
"A MISCELLANY OF AMERICAN POETRY, 1927."

APOLOGY FOR BAD DREAMS

I

In the purple light, heavy with redwood, the slopes drop seaward,
Headlong convexities of forest, drawn in together to the steep ravine. Below, on the sea-cliff,
A lonely clearing; a little field of corn by the streamside; a roof under spared trees. Then the ocean
Like a great stone someone has cut to a sharp edge and polished to shining. Beyond it, the fountain
And furnace of incredible light flowing up from the sunk sun. In the little clearing a woman
Is punishing a horse; she had tied the halter to a sapling at the edge of the wood, but when the great whip
Clung to the flanks the creature kicked so hard she feared he would snap the halter; she called from the house
The young man her son; who fetched a chain tie-rope, they working together
Noosed the small rusty links round the horse's tongue
And tied him by the swollen tongue to the tree.
Seen from this height they are shrunk to insect size,
Out of all human relation. You cannot distinguish
The blood dripping from where the chain is fastened,
The beast shuddering; but the thrust neck and the legs
Far apart. You can see the whip fall on the flanks . . .
The gesture of the arm. You cannot see the face of the woman.

The enormous light beats up out of the west across the cloud-bars of the trade-wind. The ocean
Darkens, the high clouds brighten, the hills darken together.
Unbridled and unbelievable beauty
Covers the evening world . . . not covers, grows apparent out
of it, as Venus down there grows out
From the lit sky. What said the prophet? "I create good:
and I create evil: I am the Lord."

II

This coast crying out for tragedy like all beautiful places,
(The quiet ones ask for quieter suffering: but here the
granite cliff the gaunt cypresses crown
Demands what victim? The dykes of red lava and black
what Titan? The hills like pointed flames
Beyond Soberanes, the terrible peaks of the bare hills under
the sun, what immolation?)
This coast crying out for tragedy like all beautiful places:
and like the passionate spirit of humanity
Pain for its bread: God's, many victims', the painful deaths,
the horrible transfigurements: I said in my heart,
"Better invent than suffer: imagine victims
Lest your own flesh be chosen the agonist, or you
Martyr some creature to the beauty of the place." And I said,
"Burn sacrifices once a year to magic
Horror away from the house, this little house here
You have built over the ocean with your own hands
Beside the standing boulders: for what are we,
The beast that walks upright, with speaking lips
And little hair, to think we should always be fed,
Sheltered, intact, and self-controlled? We sooner more liable
Than the other animals. Pain and terror, the insanities of
desire; not accidents but essential,

And crowd up from the core:" I imagined victims for those
wolves, I made them phantoms to follow,
They have hunted the phantoms and missed the house. It
is not good to forget over what gulfs the spirit
Of the beauty of humanity, the petal of a lost flower blown
seaward by the night-wind, floats to its quietness.

III

Boulders blunted like an old bear's teeth break up from the
headland; below them
All the soil is thick with shells, the tide-rock feasts of a dead
people.
Here the granite flanks are scarred with ancient fire, the
ghosts of the tribe
Crouch in the nights beside the ghost of a fire, they try to
remember the sunlight,
Light has died out of their skies. These have paid something
for the future
Luck of the country, while we living keep old griefs in
memory: though God's
Envy is not a likely fountain of ruin, to forget evils calls
down
Sudden reminders from the cloud: remembered deaths be
our redeemers;
Imagined victims our salvation: white as the half moon at
midnight
Someone flamelike passed me, saying, "I am Tamar Cauld-
well, I have my desire,"
Then the voice of the sea returned, when she had gone by,
the stars to their towers.
... Beautiful country burn again, Point Pinos down to the
Sur Rivers

Burn as before with bitter wonders, land and ocean and the
Carmel water.

IV

He brays humanity in a mortar to bring the savor
From the bruised root: a man having bad dreams, who invents
victims, is only the ape of that God.
He washes it out with tears and many waters, calcines it
with fire in the red crucible,
Deforms it, makes it horrible to itself: the spirit flies out and
stands naked, he sees the spirit,
He takes it in the naked ecstasy; it breaks in his hand, the
atom is broken, the power that massed it
Cries to the power that moves the stars, "I have come home
to myself, behold me.
I bruised myself in the flint mortar and burnt me
In the red shell, I tortured myself, I flew forth,
Stood naked of myself and broke me in fragments,
And here am I moving the stars that are me."
I have seen these ways of God: I know of no reason
For fire and change and torture and the old returnings.
He being sufficient might be still. I think they admit no
reason; they are the ways of my love.
Unmeasured power, incredible passion, enormous craft: no
thought apparent but burns darkly
Smothered with its own smoke in the human brain-vault:
no thought outside: a certain measure in phenomena:
The fountains of the boiling stars, the flowers on the fore-
land, the ever-returning roses of dawn.

ADJUSTMENT

Were I always to be witness and not part
Of the world's deadly and wonderful destinies
I should weed life out of my limbs and heart
To charge it wholly on these wakeful eyes.
Like a state spy at some imperial feast,
Pale foreigner who privily forbears
The spirit-dissolving grape that's God or beast
To the other and unbridled banqueters,
I should wax colder while the world more hot:
As gazing down oceans of frozen air
A watchman on a peak despises not
The spearmen striding the plain but will not share
Their pride nor the iron and driving wills that thresh
From inward the faint limbs and fragile flesh.

COMPENSATION

Solitude that unmakes me one of men
In snow-white hands brings singular recompense,
Evening me with kindlier natures when
On the needled pinewood the cold dews condense
About the hour of Rigel fallen from heaven
In wintertime, or when the long night tides
Sigh blindly from the sand-dune backward driven,
Or when on stormwings of the northwind rides
The foamscud with the cormorants, or when passes
A horse or dog with brown affectionate eyes,
Or autumn frosts are pricked by earliest grasses,
Or whirring from her covert a quail flies.
Why, even in humanity beauty and good
Show, from the mountainside of solitude.

PROMISE OF PEACE

The heads of strong old age are beautiful
Beyond all grace of youth. They have strange quiet,
Integrity, health, soundness, to the full
They've dealt with life and been atempered by it.
A young man must not sleep, his years are war
Civil and foreign but the former's worse;
But the old can breathe in safety now they are
Forgetting what youth meant, the being perverse,
Running the fool's gauntlet and getting cut
By the whips of the five senses. As for me,
If I should wish to live long it were but
To trade those fevers for tranquillity,
Thinking though that's entire and sweet in the grave
How shall the dead taste the deep treasure they have?

AGE IN PROSPECT

Praise youth's hot blood if you will, I think that happiness
Rather consists in having lived clear through
Youth and hot blood, on to the wintrier hemisphere
Where one has time to wait and remember.

Youth and hot blood are beautiful, so is peacefulness.
Youth had some islands in it but age is indeed
An island and a peak; age has infirmities,
Not few, but youth is all one fever.

To look around and to love in his appearances,
Though a little calmly, the universal God's
Beauty is better I think than to lip eagerly
The mother's breast or another woman's.

And there is no possession more sure than memory's;
But if I reach that gray island, that peak,
My hope is still to possess with eyes the homeliness
Of ancient loves, ocean and mountains,

And meditate the sea-mouth of mortality
And the fountain six feet down with a quieter thirst
Than now I feel for old age; a creature progressively
Thirsty for life will be for death too.

ANTE MORTEM

It is likely enough that lions and scorpions
Guard the end; life never was bonded to be endurable nor
the act of dying
Unpainful; the brain burning too often
Earns, though it held itself detached from the object, often
a burnt age.
No matter, I shall not shorten it by hand.
Incapable of body or unmoved of brain is no evil, one always
went envying
The quietness of stones. But if the striped blossom
Insanity spread lewd splendors and lightning terrors at the
end of the forest;
Or intolerable pain work its known miracle,
Exile the monarch soul, set a sick monkey in the office...
remember me
Entire and balanced when I was younger,
And could lift stones, and comprehend in the praises the
cruelties of life.

POST MORTEM

Happy people die whole, they are all dissolved in a moment,
they have had what they wanted,
No hard gifts; the unhappy
Linger a space, but pain is a thing that is glad to be forgotten; but one who has given
His heart to a cause or a country,
His ghost may spaniel it a while, disconsolate to watch it.
I was wondering how long the spirit
That sheds this verse will remain
When the nostrils are nipped, when the brain rots in its
vault or bubbles in the violence of fire
To be ash in metal. I was thinking
Some stalks of the wood whose roots I married to the earth
of this place will stand five centuries;
I held the roots in my hand,
The stems of the trees between two fingers: how many remote generations of women
Will drink joy from men's loins,
And dragged from between the thighs of what mothers will
giggle at my ghost when it curses the axemen,
Gray impotent voice on the sea-wind,
When the last trunk falls? The women's abundance will
have built roofs over all this foreland;
Will have buried the rock foundations
I laid here: the women's exuberance will canker and fail in
its time and like clouds the houses

Unframe, the granite of the prime
Stand from the heaps: come storm and wash clean: the
 plaster is all run to the sea and the steel
All rusted; the foreland resumes
The form we loved when we saw it. Though one at the end
 of the age and far off from this place
Should meet my presence in a poem,
The ghost would not care but be here, long sunset shadow
 in the seams of the granite, and forgotten
The flesh, a spirit for the stone.

THE BEACH

Moon-white dunes and the water like violets
The days of sun or like a dove's breast the dark ones: each
year one bather
Dies in the violet beauty of the water.
Keeps the bay young. How did you fast when men were
few and not playful?

No pits nor whirlpools in the violet water;
The tides are clear as breathing, the tall waves honest, the
sun in their hollows;
No hidden currents nor secret suction:
Every summer one bather: no secret currents but a secret
desire.

I have seen a mother with the yellow-gray hair
Crossing in strings the convulsed face from the violet water
go babbling
Up the white dune; I have seen a young wife
Scream on the beach, writhing among the bystanders, they
held her with their hands.

It takes the gain and its face not changes;
It is fed; it is greater than man and much more beautiful:
we that eat bees
Accuse fair beauty if indeed it is fed

With the thin infusion of one young life in the water, each
weary summer?

How did you fast, you water like violets,
When men were few and not playful, brown fishers of the
ebb, not one in ten years?

How you will feast in the thronged years coming,
The exuberance of women makes you so many playfellows,
you choose among thousands.

SUMMER HOLIDAY

When the sun shouts and people abound
One thinks there were the ages of stone and the age of bronze
And the iron age; iron the unstable metal;
Steel made of iron, unstable as his mother; the towered-up
cities
Will be stains of rust on mounds of plaster.
Roots will not pierce the heaps for a time, kind rains will
cure them,
Then nothing will remain of the iron age
And all these people but a thigh-bone or so, a poem
Stuck in the world's thought, splinters of glass
In the rubbish dumps, a concrete dam far off in the moun-
tain...

LOVE-CHILDREN

The trail's high up on the ridge, no one goes down
But the east wind and the falling water the concave slope
without a name to the little bay
That has no name either. The fish-hawk plunges
Beyond the long rocks, rises with streaming silver; the eagle
strikes down from the ridge and robs the fish-hawk.
The stunted redwoods neither grow nor grow old
Up the steep slope, remembering winter and the sea-wind;
the ferns are maiden green by the falling water;
The seas whiten on the reefs; nothing has changed
For a thousand years, ten thousand. It is not a thousand, it
is only seventy, since man and woman came down
The untrampled slope, forcing a trail through lupine
And mountain laurel; they built a hut against the stream-
side; the coast cannot remember their names.
They had light eyes and white skins, and nobody knew
What they fled, why they came. They had children in this
place; loved while they clung to the breast but later
Naked, untaught, uncared for, as wild as foxes,
A boy and a girl; the coast remembers they would squat be-
side a squirrel's earth until the furred thing
Crept out, then what the small hands caught the teeth
Would tear living. What implacable flame of passion I
wonder left its children forgotten
To eat vermin and the raw mussels of the rock?

Love at the height is a bad hearth-fire, a wolf in the house
to keep the children. I imagine languors,
Sick loathing, miserable renewals, blind insolence
In the eye of the noon sun. They'd stripped to bathe, desire
on the salted beach between the skerries
Came bronze-clawed like a hawk; the children to see
Was the deep pearl, the last abandonment. They lived twelve
years in the hut beside the stream, and the children
Died, and the hut is fallen and vanished, the paths
Filled with thicket and vanished utterly. Nothing remains.

Certainly a flame burned in this place;
Its lamps wandered away, no one knows whither.
The flaming oil-drops fell and burned out. No one imagines
that ghosts move here, at noon or at midnight.
I'm never sorry to think that here's a planet
Will go on like this glen, perfectly whole and content, after
mankind is scummed from the kettle.
No ghost will walk under the latter starlight.
The little phials of desire have all been emptied and broken.

Here the ocean echoes, the stream's like bird-song;
The stunted redwoods neither grow nor grow old
Up the steep slope, remembering winter and the sea-wind;
the ferns are maiden green by the falling water;
The seas whiten on the reefs; the fish-hawk plunges
Beyond the long rocks, rises with streaming silver; the eagle
strikes down from the ridge and robs the fish-hawk.

NOON

The pure air trembles, O pitiless God,
The air aches with flame on these gaunt rocks
Over the flat sea's face, the forest
Shakes in gales of piercing light.

But the altars are behind and higher
Where the great hills raise naked heads,
Pale agonists in the reverberance
Of the pure air and the pitiless God.

On the domed skull of every hill
Who stand blazing with spread vans,
The arms uplifted, the eyes in ecstasy?

What wine has the God drunk, to sing
Violently in heaven, what wine his worshippers
Whose silence blazes? The light that is over
Light, the terror of noon, the eyes
That the eagles die at, have thrown down
Me and my pride, here I lie naked
In a hollow of the shadowless rocks,
Full of the God, having drunk fire.

CLOUDS OF EVENING

Enormous cloud-mountains that form over Point Lobos and
into the sunset,

Figures of fire on the walls of to-night's storm,

Foam of gold in gorges of fire, and the great file of warrior
angels:

Dreams gathering in the curded brain of the earth,

The sky the brain-vault, on the threshold of sleep: poor
earth, you like your children

By inordinate desires tortured make dreams?

Storms more enormous, wars nobler, more toppling moun-
tains, more jewelled waters, more free

Fires on impossible headlands . . . as a poor girl

Wishing her lover taller and more desirous, and herself
maned with gold,

Dreams the world right, in the cold bed, about dawn.

Dreams are beautiful; the slaves of form are beautiful also;

I have grown to believe

A stone is a better pillow than many visions.

OCTOBER EVENING

Male-throated under the shallow sea-fog
Moaned a ship's horn quivering the shorelong granite.
Coyotes toward the valley made answer,
Their little wolf-pads in the dead grass by the stream
Wet with the young season's first rain,
Their jagged wail trespassing among the steep stars.
What stars? Aldebaran under the dove-leash
Pleiades. I thought, in an hour Orion will be risen,
Be glad for summer is dead and the sky
Turns over to darkness, good storms, few guests, glad rivers.

PELICANS

Four pelicans went over the house,
Sculled their worn oars over the courtyard: I saw that un-
gainliness
Magnifies the idea of strength.
A lifting gale of sea-gulls followed them; slim yachts of the
element,
Natural growths of the sky, no wonder
Light wings to leave sea; but those grave weights toil, and
are powerful,
And the wings torn with old storms remember
The cone that the oldest redwood dropped from, the tilting
of continents,
The dinosaur's day, the lift of new sea-lines.
The omnisecular spirit keeps the old with the new also.
Nothing at all has suffered erasure.
There is life not of our time. He calls ungainly bodies
As beautiful as the grace of horses.
He is weary of nothing; he watches air-planes; he watches
pelicans.

CREDO

My friend from Asia has powers and magic, he plucks a
blue leaf from the young blue-gum
And gazing upon it, gathering and quieting
The God in his mind, creates an ocean more real than the
ocean, the salt, the actual
Appalling presence, the power of the waters.
He believes that nothing is real except as we make it. I
humbler have found in my blood
Bred west of Caucasus a harder mysticism.
Multitude stands in my mind but I think that the ocean in
the bone vault is only
The bone vault's ocean: out there is the ocean's;
The water is the water, the cliff is the rock, come shocks and
flashes of reality. The mind
Passes, the eye closes, the spirit is a passage;
The beauty of things was born before eyes and sufficient to
itself; the heart-breaking beauty
Will remain when there is no heart to break for it.

COMPLETE LIST OF TITLES IN THE MODERN LIBRARY

For convenience in ordering use number at right of title

ADAMS, HENRY	The Education of Henry Adams 76
AIKEN, CONRAD (Editor)	A Comprehensive Anthology of American Poetry 101
AIKEN, CONRAD (Editor)	20th-Century American Poetry 127
ALEICHEM, SOLOM	Selected Stories of 145
ANDERSON, SHERWOOD	Winesburg, Ohio 104
AQUINAS, ST. THOMAS	Introduction to St. Thomas Aquinas 259
ARISTOTLE	Introduction to Aristotle 248
ARISTOTLE	Politics 228
ARISTOTLE	Rhetoric and Poetics 246
AUDEN, W. H.	Selected Poetry of 160
AUGUSTINE, ST.	The Confessions of 263
AUSTEN, JANE	Pride and Prejudice and Sense and Sensibility 264
BACON, FRANCIS	Selected Writings of 256
BALZAC	Cousin Bette 299
BALZAC	Droll Stories 193
BALZAC	Père Goriot and Eugénie Grandet 245
BEERBOHM, MAX	Zuleika Dobson 116
BELLAMY, EDWARD	Looking Backward 22
BENNETT, ARNOLD	The Old Wives' Tale 184
BERGSON, HENRI	Creative Evolution 231
BLAKE, WILLIAM	Selected Poetry & Prose of 285
BOCCACCIO	The Decameron 71
BOSWELL, JAMES	The Life of Samuel Johnson 282
BRONTË, CHARLOTTE	Jane Eyre 64
BRONTË, EMILY	Wuthering Heights 106
BROWNING, ROBERT	Selected Poetry of 198
BUCK, PEARL	The Good Earth 15
BURCKHARDT, JACOB	The Civilization of the Renaissance in Italy 32
BURK, JOHN N.	The Life and Works of Beethoven 241
BUTLER, SAMUEL	Erewhon and Erewhon Revisited 136
BUTLER, SAMUEL	The Way of All Flesh 13
BYRON, LORD	The Selected Poetry of 195
BYRON, LORD	Don Juan 24
CAESAR, JULIUS	The Gallic War and Other Writings of 295
CALDWELL, ERSKINE	God's Little Acre 51
CALDWELL, ERSKINE	Tobacco Road 249
CARROLL, LEWIS	Alice in Wonderland, etc. 79
CASANOVA, JACQUES	Memoirs of Casanova 165
CELLINI, BENVENUTO	Autobiography of Cellini 150
CERVANTES	Don Quixote 174
CHAUCER	The Canterbury Tales 161
CHEKHOV, ANTON	Best Plays by 171
CHEKHOV, ANTON	The Short Stories of 50
CICERO	The Basic Works of 272

COMMAGER, HENRY STEELE
& NEVINS, ALLAN
CONFUCIUS
CONRAD, JOSEPH
CONRAD, JOSEPH
CONRAD, JOSEPH
COOPER, JAMES FENIMORE
CORNEILLE & RACINE
CORVO, FREDERICK BARON
CRANE, STEPHEN
CUMMINGS, E. E.
DANA, RICHARD HENRY
DANTE
DA VINCI, LEONARDO
DEFOE, DANIEL
DEFOE, DANIEL

DESCARTES, RENE
DEWEY, JOHN
DICKENS, CHARLES
DICKENS, CHARLES
DICKENS, CHARLES
DICKINSON, EMILY
DINESEN, ISAK
DINESEN, ISAK
DONNE, JOHN

DOS PASSOS, JOHN
DOSTOYEVSKY, FYODOR
DOSTOYEVSKY, FYODOR
DOSTOYEVSKY, FYODOR
DOSTOYEVSKY, FYODOR
DOUGLAS, NORMAN
DOYLE, SIR ARTHUR CONAN

DREISER, THEODORE
DUMAS, ALEXANDRE
DUMAS, ALEXANDRE
DU MAURIER, DAPHNE
EMERSON, RALPH WALDO
FAULKNER, WILLIAM
FAULKNER, WILLIAM
FAULKNER, WILLIAM
FAULKNER, WILLIAM
FAULKNER, WILLIAM

FIELDING, HENRY
FIELDING, HENRY
FLAUBERT, GUSTAVE
FORESTER, C. S.
FRANCE, ANATOLE
FRANK, ANNE
FRANKLIN, BENJAMIN
FREUD, SIGMUND
FROST, ROBERT
GALSWORTHY, JOHN

GEORGE, HENRY
GOETHE

A Short History of the United States 235
The Wisdom of Confucius 306
Lord Jim 186
Nostromo 275
Victory 34
The Pathfinder 105
Six Plays of Corneille and Racine 194
A History of the Borgias 192
The Red Badge of Courage 130
The Enormous Room 214
Two Years Before the Mast 236
The Divine Comedy 208
The Notebooks of 156
Moll Flanders 122
Robinson Crusoe and A Journal of the
Plague Year 92
Philosophical Writings 43
Human Nature and Conduct 173
David Copperfield 110
Pickwick Papers 204
A Tale of Two Cities 189
Selected Poems of 25
Out of Africa 23
Seven Gothic Tales 54
Complete Poetry and Selected Prose of
12
Three Soldiers 205
The Best Short Stories of 293
The Brothers Karamazov 151
Crime and Punishment 199
The Possessed 55
South Wind 5
The Adventures and Memoirs of Sher-
lock Holmes 206
Sister Carrie 8
Camille 69
The Three Musketeers 143
Rebecca 227
Essays and Other Writings 91
Absalom, Absalom! 271
Go Down, Moses 175
Light in August 88
Sanctuary 61
The Sound and the Fury and As I Lay
Dying 187
Joseph Andrews 117
Tom Jones 185
Madame Bovary 28
The African Queen 102
Penguin Island 210
Diary of a Young Girl 298
Autobiography, etc. 39
The Interpretation of Dreams 96
The Poems of 242
The Apple Tree
(in Great Modern Short Stories 168)
Progress and Poverty 36
Faust 177

GOGOL, NIKOLAI
GOLDSMITH, OLIVER

GRAVES, ROBERT
GUNTHER, JOHN
HACKETT, FRANCIS

HAGGARD, H. RIDER
HARDY, THOMAS
HARDY, THOMAS
HARDY, THOMAS
HART & KAUFMAN
HARTE, BRET
HAWTHORNE, NATHANIEL
HEGEL
HELLMAN, LILLIAN
HENRY, O.
HERODOTUS
HOMER

HOMER
HORACE
HOWARD, JOHN TASKER
HOWELLS, WILLIAM DEAN
HUDSON, W. H.
HUGO, VICTOR
HUXLEY, ALDOUS
HUXLEY, ALDOUS
HUXLEY, ALDOUS
IBSEN, HENRIK
IRVING, WASHINGTON
JAMES, HENRY
JAMES, HENRY
JAMES, HENRY
JAMES, HENRY
JAMES, HENRY
JAMES, WILLIAM
JAMES, WILLIAM
JEFFERS, ROBINSON

JEFFERSON, THOMAS
JOYCE, JAMES
JUNG, C. G.
KAFKA, FRANZ
KANT
KANT
KAUFMAN & HART
KEATS

KIPLING, RUDYARD
KOESTLER, ARTHUR
LAOTSE
LAWRENCE, D. H.
LAWRENCE, D. H.
LAWRENCE, D. H.
LEWIS, SINCLAIR
LEWIS, SINCLAIR
LONGFELLOW, HENRY W.
LONGFELLOW, HENRY W.

Dead Souls 40
The Vicar of Wakefield and other Writings 291
I, Claudius 20
Death Be Not Proud 286
The Personal History of Henry the Eighth 265
She and King Solomon's Mines 163
Jude the Obscure 135
The Mayor of Casterbridge 17
The Return of the Native 121
Tess of the D'Urbervilles 72
Six Plays by 233
The Best Stories of 250
The Scarlet Letter 93
The Philosophy of 239
Four Plays by 223
Best Short Stories of 26
The Persian Wars 255
The Iliad 166
The Odyssey 167
The Complete Works of 141
World's Great Operas 302
The Rise of Silas Lapham 277
Green Mansions 89
The Hunchback of Notre Dame 35
Antic Hay 209
Brave New World 48
Point Counter Point 180
Six Plays by 305
Selected Writings of 240
The Bostonians 16
The Portrait of a Lady 107
The Turn of the Screw 169
Washington Square 269
The Wings of the Dove 244
The Philosophy of William James 114
The Varieties of Religious Experience 70
Roan Stallion; Tamar and Other Poems 118
The Life and Selected Writings of 234
Dubliners 124
Basic Writings of 300
Selected Stories of 283
Critique of Pure Reason 297
The Philosophy of 266
Six Plays by 233
The Complete Poetry and Selected Prose of 273
Kim 99
Darkness at Noon 74
The Wisdom of 262
The Rainbow 128
Sons and Lovers 109
Women in Love 68
Dodsworth 252
Cass Timberlane 221
Poems 56
Aphrodite 77

LUDWIG, EMIL

MACHIAVELLI
MALRAUX, ANDRE
MANN, THOMAS

MARQUAND, JOHN P.
MARX, KARL
MAUGHAM, W. SOMERSET
MAUGHAM, W. SOMERSET
MAUGHAM, W. SOMERSET
MAUGHAM, W. SOMERSET
MAUPASSANT, GUY DE
MAUROIS, ANDRÉ
McCORD, DAVID (Editor)

MELVILLE, HERMAN
MEREDITH, GEORGE
MEREDITH, GEORGE
MEREJKOWSKI, DMITRI
MICHENER, JAMES A.
MILTON, JOHN

MOLIÈRE
MONTAIGNE
MORIER, JAMES

NASH, OGDEN
NEVINS, ALLAN &
COMMAGER, HENRY STEELE
NEWMAN, CARDINAL JOHN H.
NIETZSCHE, FRIEDRICH
NOSTRADAMUS
ODETS, CLIFFORD
O'HARA, JOHN
O'HARA, JOHN
O'NEILL, EUGENE

O'NEILL, EUGENE

PALGRAVE, FRANCIS (Editor)
PARKER, DOROTHY
PARKER, DOROTHY
PARKMAN, FRANCIS
PASCAL, BLAISE
PATER, WALTER
PEPYS, SAMUEL
PERELMAN, S. J.
PLATO
PLATO
POE, EDGAR ALLAN
POLO, MARCO
POPE, ALEXANDER
PORTER, KATHERINE ANNE
PORTER, KATHERINE ANNE
PROUST, MARCEL
PROUST, MARCEL
PROUST, MARCEL
PROUST, MARCEL

Napoleon 95

The Prince and The Discourses 65
Man's Fate 33
Death in Venice (in Great German
Short Novels and Stories 108)
The Late George Apley 182
Capital and Other Writings 202
The Best Short Stories of 14
Cakes and Ale 270
The Moon and Sixpence 27
Of Human Bondage 176
Best Short Stories 98
Disraeli 46
What Cheer: An Anthology of Humor-
ous and Witty Verse 190
Moby Dick 119
The Egoist 253
The Ordeal of Richard Feverel 134
The Romance of Leonardo da Vinci 138
Selected Writings of 296
The Complete Poetry and Selected Prose
of John Milton 132
Eight Plays by 78
Selected Essays of 218
The Adventures of Hajji Baba of
Ispahan 289
The Selected Verse of Ogden Nash 191
A Short History of the United States
235
Apologia Pro Vita Sua 113
Thus Spake Zarathustra 9
Oracles of 81
Six Plays of 67
Appointment in Samarra 42
Selected Short Stories of 211
The Emperor Jones, Anna Christie and
The Hairy Ape 146
The Long Voyage Home: Seven Plays
of the Sea 111
The Golden Treasury 232
The Collected Short Stories of 123
The Collected Poetry of 237
The Oregon Trail 267
Pensées and The Provincial Letters 164
The Renaissance 86
Passages from the Diary of 103
The Best of 247
The Republic 153
The Works of Plato 181
Selected Poetry and Prose 82
The Travels of Marco Polo 196
Selected Works of 257
Flowering Judas 284
Pale Horse, Pale Rider 45
The Captive 120
Cities of the Plain 220
The Guermantes Way 213
The Past Recaptured 278

- PROUST, MARCEL
 PROUST, MARCEL
 PROUST, MARCEL
 RACINE & CORNEILLE
 READE, CHARLES
 REED, JOHN
 RENAN, ERNEST
 RICHARDSON, SAMUEL
 RODGERS AND
 HAMMERSTEIN
 ROSTAND, EDMOND
 ROUSSEAU, JEAN JACQUES
 RUNYON, DAMON
 RUSSELL, BERTRAND
 SAKI
 SALINGER, J. D.
 SALINGER, J. D.
 SANTAYANA, GEORGE
 SCHOPENHAUER
 SCHULBERG, BUDD
 SHAKESPEARE, WILLIAM
 SHAKESPEARE, WILLIAM
 SHAKESPEARE, WILLIAM
 SHAW, BERNARD
 SHAW, BERNARD
 SHAW, IRWIN
 SHELLEY
 SMOLLETT, TOBIAS
 SPINOZA
 STEINBECK, JOHN
 STEINBECK, JOHN
 STEINBECK, JOHN
 STEINBECK, JOHN
 STENDHAL
 STERNE, LAURENCE
 STEWART, GEORGE R.
 STOKER, BRAM
 STONE, IRVING
 STOWE, HARRIET BEECHER
 STRACHEY, LYTTON
 SUETONIUS
 SWIFT, JONATHAN
 SYMONDS, JOHN A.
 TACITUS
 TENNYSON
 THACKERAY, WILLIAM
 THACKERAY, WILLIAM
 THOMPSON, FRANCIS
 THOREAU, HENRY DAVID
 THUCYDIDES
 THURBER, JAMES
 TOLSTOY, LEO
 TROLLOPE, ANTHONY
 TROLLOPE, ANTHONY
 TURGENEV, IVAN
 Swann's Way 59
 The Sweet Cheat Gone 260
 Within a Budding Grove 172
 Six Plays by 194
 The Cloister and the Hearth 62
 Ten Days that Shook the World 215
 The Life of Jesus 140
 Clarissa 10
 Six Plays by 200
 CYRANO de Bergerac 154
 The Confessions of 243
 Famous Stories 53
 Selected Papers of Bertrand Russell 137
 The Short Stories of 280
 Nine Stories 301
 The Catcher in the Rye 90
 The Sense of Beauty 292
 The Philosophy of Schopenhauer 52
 What Makes Sammy Run? 281
 Tragedies, 2, 3—complete, 2 vols
 Comedies, 4, 5—complete, 2 vols.
 Histories, 6
 Histories, Poems, 7 } complete, 2 vols.
 Four Plays by 19
 Saint Joan, Major Barbara, and
 Androcles and the Lion 294
 The Young Lions 112
 The Selected Poetry & Prose of 274
 Humphry Clinker 159
 The Philosophy of Spinoza 60
 In Dubious Battle 115
 The Grapes of Wrath 148
 Of Mice and Men 29
 Tortilla Flat 216
 The Red and the Black 157
 Tristram Shandy 147
 Storm 254
 Dracula 31
 Lust for Life 11
 Uncle Tom's Cabin 261
 Eminent Victorians 212
 Lives of the Twelve Caesars 188
 Gulliver's Travels and Other Writings
 100
 The Life of Michelangelo 49
 The Complete Works of 222
 Selected Poetry of 230
 Henry Esmond 80
 Vanity Fair 131
 Complete Poems 38
 Walden and Other Writings 155
 The Complete Writings of 58
 The Thurber Carnival 85
 Anna Karenina 37
 Barchester Towers and The Warden 41
 The Eustace Diamonds 251
 Fathers and Sons 21

TWAIN, MARK	A Connecticut Yankee in King Arthur's Court 162
VASARI, GIORGIO	Lives of the Most Eminent Painters, Sculptors and Architects 190
VEBLEN, THORSTEIN	The Theory of the Leisure Class 63
VIRGIL	The Aeneid, Eclogues & Georgics 75
VOLTAIRE	Candide and Other Writings 47
WALPOLE, HUGH	Fortitude 178
WARREN, ROBERT PENN	All The King's Men 170
WEBB, MARY	Precious Bane 219
WEIDMAN, JEROME	I Can Get It For You Wholesale 225
WELLS, H. G.	Tono Bungay 197
WELTY, EUDORA	Selected Stories of 290
WHARTON, EDITH	The Age of Innocence 229
WHITMAN, WALT	Leaves of Grass 97
WILDE, OSCAR	Dorian Gray, De Profundis 125
WILDE, OSCAR	The Plays of Oscar Wilde 83
WILDE, OSCAR	Poems and Fairy Tales 84
WODEHOUSE, P. J.	Selected Stories 126
WORDSWORTH	Selected Poetry of 268
YEATS, W. B. (Editor)	Irish Fairy and Folk Tales 44
YOUNG, G. F.	The Medici 179
ZIMMERN, ALFRED	The Greek Commonwealth 207
ZOLA, EMILE	Nana 142

MISCELLANEOUS

An Anthology of Irish Literature 288	Great Modern Short Stories 168
The Arabian Nights' Entertainments 201	Great Tales of the American West 238
Best Amer. Humorous Short Stories 87	The Greek Poets 203
Best Russian Short Stories 18	A Kierkegaard Anthology 303
Best Spanish Stories 129	The Laun Poets 217
A Comprehensive Anthology of American Poetry 101	The Making of Man: An Outline of Anthology 149
The Consolation of Philosophy 226	Making of Society 183
Eight Famous Elizabethan Plays 94	Medieval Romances 133
Eighteenth-Century Plays 224	The Modern Library Dictionary 1
Famous Ghost Stories 73	New Voices in the American Theatre 258
The Federalist 139	Outline of Abnormal Psychology 152
Five Great Modern Irish Plays 30	Outline of Psychoanalysis 66
Fourteen Great Detective Stories 144	Restoration Plays 287
Great German Short Novels and Stories 108	Seven Famous Greek Plays 158
	The Short Bible 57
	Six Modern American Plays 276
	Twentieth-Century Amer. Poetry 127

MODERN LIBRARY GIANTS

*A series of full-sized library editions of books that formerly
were available only in cumbersome and expensive sets.*

THE MODERN LIBRARY GIANTS REPRESENT A
SELECTION OF THE WORLD'S GREATEST BOOKS

These volumes contain from 600 to 1,400 pages each

- G1. TOLSTOY, LEO. War and Peace.
- G2. BOSWELL, JAMES. Life of Samuel Johnson.
- G3. HUGO, VICTOR. Les Misérables
- G4. THE COMPLETE POEMS OF KEATS AND SHELLEY.
- G5. PLUTARCH'S LIVES (The Dryden Translation).
- G6. } GIBBON, EDWARD. The Decline and Fall of the Roman
- G7. } Empire (Complete in three volumes).
- G8. }
- G9. GREAT VOICES OF THE REFORMATION.
- G10. TWELVE FAMOUS RESTORATION PLAYS (1660-1820)
(Congreve, Wycherley, Gay, Goldsmith, Sheridan, etc.)
- G11. JAMES, HENRY. The Short Stories of
- G12. THE MOST POPULAR NOVELS OF SIR WALTER
SCOTT (Quentin Durward, Ivanhoe and Kenilworth).
- G13. CARLYLE, THOMAS. The French Revolution.
- G14. BULFINCH'S MYTHOLOGY (Illustrated).
- G15. CERVANTES. Don Quixote (Illustrated).
- G16. WOLFE, THOMAS. Look Homeward, Angel.
- G17. THE POEMS AND PLAYS OF ROBERT BROWNING.
- G18. ELEVEN PLAYS OF HENRIK IBSEN.
- G19. THE COMPLETE WORKS OF HOMER.
- G20. THE LIFE AND WRITINGS OF ABRAHAM LINCOLN.
- G21. SIXTEEN FAMOUS AMERICAN PLAYS.
- G22. THIRTY FAMOUS ONE-ACT PLAYS.
- G23. TOLSTOY, LEO. Anna Karenina.
- G24. LAMB, CHARLES. The Complete Works and Letters of
- G25. THE COMPLETE PLAYS OF GILBERT AND SULLIVAN.
- G26. MARX, KARL. Capital.
- G27. DARWIN, CHARLES. Origin of Species & The Descent of Man.
- G28. THE COMPLETE WORKS OF LEWIS CARROLL.
- G29. PRESCOTT, WILLIAM H. The Conquest of Mexico and
The Conquest of Peru.
- G30. MYERS, GUSTAVUS. History of the Great American
Fortunes.
- G31. FAMOUS SCIENCE-FICTION STORIES: ADVENTURES IN
TIME AND SPACE
- G32. SMITH, ADAM. The Wealth of Nations.
- G33. COLLINS, WILKIE. The Moonstone and The Woman in White.
- G34. NIETZSCHE, FRIEDRICH. The Philosophy of Nietzsche.
- G35. BURY, J. B. A History of Greece.
- G36. DOSTOYEVSKY, FYODOR. The Brothers Karamazov.
- G37. THE COMPLETE NOVELS AND SELECTED TALES OF
NATHANIEL HAWTHORNE.

- G39. THE BASIC WRITINGS OF SIGMUND FREUD.
- G40. THE COMPLETE TALES AND POEMS OF EDGAR ALLAN POE.
- G41. FARRELL, JAMES T. Studs Lonigan.
- G42. THE POEMS AND PLAYS OF TENNYSON.
- G43. DEWEY, JOHN. Intelligence in the Modern World: John Dewey's Philosophy
- G44. DOS PASSOS, JOHN. U. S. A.
- G45. STOIC AND EPICUREAN PHILOSOPHERS
- G46. A NEW ANTHOLOGY OF MODERN POETRY.
- G47. THE ENGLISH PHILOSOPHERS FROM BACON TO MILL.
- G48. THE METROPOLITAN OPERA GUIDE.
- G49. TWAIN, MARK. Tom Sawyer and Huckleberry Finn.
- G50. WHITMAN, WALT. Leaves of Grass.
- G51. THE BEST-KNOWN NOVELS OF GEORGE ELIOT.
- G52. JOYCE, JAMES. Ulysses.
- G53. SUE, EUGENE. The Wandering Jew.
- G54. AN ANTHOLOGY OF FAMOUS BRITISH STORIES.
- G55. O'NEILL, EUGENE. Nine Plays by
- G56. THE WISDOM OF CATHOLICISM.
- G57. MELVILLE. Selected Writings of Herman Melville.
- G58. THE COMPLETE NOVELS OF JANE AUSTEN.
- G59. THE WISDOM OF CHINA AND INDIA.
- G60. DOSTOYEVSKY, FYODOR. The Idiot.
- G61. SPAETH, SIGMUND. A Guide to Great Orchestral Music.
- G62. THE POEMS, PROSE AND PLAYS OF PUSHKIN.
- G63. SIXTEEN FAMOUS BRITISH PLAYS.
- G64. MELVILLE, HERMAN. Moby Dick
- G65. THE COMPLETE WORKS OF RABELAIS.
- G66. THREE FAMOUS MURDER NOVELS
Before the Fact, Francis Iles.
Trent's Last Case, E. C. Bentley.
The House of the Arrow, A. E. W. Mason.
- G67. ANTHOLOGY OF FAMOUS ENGLISH AND AMERICAN POETRY.
- G68. THE SELECTED WORK OF TOM PAINE.
- G69. ONE HUNDRED AND ONE YEARS' ENTERTAINMENT.
- G70. THE COMPLETE POETRY OF JOHN DONNE AND WILLIAM BLAKE.
- G71. SIXTEEN FAMOUS EUROPEAN PLAYS.
- G72. GREAT TALES OF TERROR AND THE SUPERNATURAL.
- G73. A SUB-TREASURY OF AMERICAN HUMOR.
- G74. ST. AUGUSTINE. The City of God.
- G75. SELECTED WRITINGS OF ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON.
- G76. GRIMM AND ANDERSEN, TALES OF
- G77. AN ANTHOLOGY OF FAMOUS AMERICAN STORIES.
- G78. HOLMES, OLIVER WENDELL. The Mind and Faith of Justice Holmes.
- G79. THE WISDOM OF ISRAEL.
- G80. DREISER, THEODORE. An American Tragedy.
- G81. AN ENCYCLOPEDIA OF MODERN AMERICAN HUMOR.
- G82. FAULKNER, WILLIAM. The Faulkner Reader

No modern library is complete
without THE AMERICAN
COLLEGE DICTIONARY

1472 pages • 7" x 10" • large, clear type, Buckram binding, thumb-indexed \$6.00
Buckram binding, without index, \$5.00 • Special red Fabrioid binding, in handsome gift box, \$7.50 • De luxe red leather binding, gold edges, gift box, \$15.00